



HISTORIC LEAVES

VOLUME IV.

April, 1905

TO

January, 1906

Published by
THE SOMERVILLE HISTORICAL SOCIETY
Somerville, Mass.

Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

April, 1905

Vol. IV

No. 1

CONTENTS.

| | PAGE |
|--|--------------------------------|
| ELMER HEWITT CAPEN | <i>David L. Maulsby</i> 1 |
| THE FLORA OF SOMERVILLE | <i>Louise A. Vinal</i> 4 |
| CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS WITHOUT THE PENINSULA | <i>Frank Mortimer Hawes</i> 14 |
| THE OLD ROYALL HOUSE, MEDFORD | <i>Charles D. Elliot</i> 23 |
| OFFICERS OF SOMERVILLE HISTORICAL SOCIETY | 24 |

HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

Society's Rooms, Tufts House, Sycamore Street,
Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee

PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL EARLE

GILS
The Society

26 C '05

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. IV.

APRIL, 1905

No. I

ELMER HEWITT CAPEN

By David L. Maulsby

Elmer Hewitt Capen was born at Stoughton, April 5, 1838. He died at Tufts College, March 22, 1905.

He received his preparatory education at Pierce Academy, Middleborough, and at the Green Mountain Institute, Woodstock, Vt. He entered Tufts in 1856, and was graduated with the degree of A. B. in 1860. During the year 1859-60 Mr. Capen served in the Massachusetts legislature. He studied law with Thomas S. Harlow, of Boston, and at the Harvard Law School, but although admitted to the bar in 1864, he never practiced. Instead, he studied theology with the Rev. A. St. John Chambré, and in 1864 began to preach.

From 1865 till 1869 he was pastor of the Independent Christian church in Gloucester. The next year, partly on account of his wife's health, he removed to St. Paul, Minn., to take charge of the Universalist church there. In 1870 he was called to the First Universalist church in Providence, R. I. Here he remained for five years, meanwhile securing the erection of a fine church building.

In 1875 he was summoned to the presidency of Tufts College, a position he held until his death. Besides his administrative duties, he taught ethics, political science, and international law, until the establishment within the last few years of college departments including these subjects. His course in ancient law was continued into the year of his death. He also supplied the college pulpit.

President Capen was twice married: in 1866 to Miss Letitia Howard Mussey, of New London, Conn., who died in 1872; and in 1877 to Miss Mary Lincoln Edwards, of Brookline. His widow and three children survive him: Samuel Paul Capen, Ruth Paul Capen, and Rosamond Edwards Capen.

President Capen's honorary degrees are: A. M., received in 1877 from Tufts; D. D., 1879, from Lombard University; and LL.D., 1899, from Buchtel College.

The offices he has held include, besides the presidency of Tufts College, the presidency of the New England Commission on Admission Examinations, from its establishment until its last meeting (1886-1903); membership on the board of trustees of the Universalist General Convention, from 1877 to 1895; membership on the State Board of Education since 1889, involving the chairmanship of the board of visitors of the Normal School at Salem and that at Fitchburg, and of the building committees of both institutions. He served as president of the New England Association of Colleges and Preparatory Schools, and of the lately-founded (1904?) Auxiliary Educational League. He was, also, since 1871, one of the trustees of Dean Academy. During the existence of the Massachusetts Law and Order League (1886-1900), he served as its president. Although never holding any local political office, Dr. Capen was chairman of the ward 4 delegation in the Somerville mayoralty convention in 1895, and led the revolt which resulted in the nomination of Albion A. Perry. Dr. Capen was also elected a delegate to the Republican National Convention of 1888, but did not serve. He was president of the Mystic Valley Club for five years; a charter member in his college days of the Theta Delta Chi Fraternity; an organization member of the Delta Chapter of Massachusetts, Phi Beta Kappa; and a director recently of the Bingham Hospital for Incurables. Besides, he held membership in the Twentieth Century Club, the University Club, the Boston Club, the New England Historic Genealogical Society, and the Somerville Historical Society.

President Capen's publications include the article on "The Philosophy of Universalism," in "The Latest Word of Universalism"; the article on "The Atonement," in the Universalist section of the Columbian Congress; the article on "Universalism" in Hertzog's Religious Cyclopaedia; and the articles on "Universalism" and "Tufts College" in the Encyclopaedia Britannica. More recent publications are a volume of "Occa-

sional Addresses," and a revised edition of the denominational service book, called "Gloria Patri."

A few words are insufficient to summarize this lifetime of service. Dr. Capen's public spirit is indicated in his pursuance of a vast round of public duties outside the requirements of his college presidency. As a college president, he was eager to lead in the educational progress of his time. It is in accord with his spirit that Tufts was the first New England college to substitute modern languages for Greek as an admission requirement, to omit Greek as a requirement for the A. B. degree, and to grant the degree on the completion of a definite amount of work rather than of a definite number of years of residence.

The growth of the college to university proportions is a further tribute to his liberality and sagacity. As an administrator, President Capen believed in allowing faculty and students alike the largest possible freedom. He was the reverse of a martinet in government, while exacting manliness and respect from the student body. As an orator, he was eloquent and strong. As a man, he was considerate and magnanimous, a friend to all in distress, quick to perceive the good qualities of his associates, and to put them to use. In private he loved his family life, and was a man of warm friendships. Now that he is gone, we shall appreciate him better. We shall continue to miss him, while recognizing the beneficence of his departure at the height of his power and in the flower of his usefulness.

THE FLORA OF SOMERVILLE

By Louise A. Vinal

A city of 70,000 inhabitants, bounded on two sides by still larger cities, offers an unpromising field of research to the most enthusiastic botanist. But the interests of this society are largely in the days that are gone, and for this half-hour we will try and picture the vegetation of Somerville from the arrival of the first colonists to the time when the encroachments of the rapidly-growing city drove from its limits all but the most common of its native plants.

The first mention of the vegetation of that particular part of the Massachusetts Bay Colony which since 1842 has been known as Somerville was made by the surveying party that left Salem shortly after the arrival of Endicott and his colonists. They traveled through an "uncouth wilderness" until they reached Mishawum, now Charlestown, and they reported that "they found it was a neck of land generally full of stately timber, as was the main." And Thomas Graves, who came over as engineer of the Charlestown colony the next year, wrote home that "It is very beautiful in open lands mixed with goodly woods, and again open plaines, in some places five hundred acres, some places more, some lesse, not much troublesome for to cleere for the plough to goe in, no place barren but on the tops of the hills." He also says: "The grass and weeds grow up to a man's face in the lowlands." And the Rev. Mr. Higginson, writing of the settlements on Charles river, speaks of the "abundance of grass that groweth everywhere, both very thick, very long, and very high in divers places."

From these simple statements, it is not difficult to imagine the aspect of our city at that time. On the north, broad marshes extended along the Mystic river, from the Medford line to Charlestown Neck, the marsh grasses green and beautiful in their pristine freshness. On the south, Miller's river, or Willis creek, as it was first called, a broad inlet from the sea, reached beyond Union square, probably as far as where the bleachery now stands; and from there to Charlestown Neck was another

extent of salt marsh. And again on the west was a narrower strip of land that felt the influence of salt water where Alewife brook divides Somerville from Cambridge and Arlington. Numerous brooks flowed through valleys between the many hills, watering "large meadows, without any tree or shrub to hinder the scythe."

The hills of Somerville are drumlins, and were doubtless covered with the hardwood trees that thrive best on such dry, glacial soil—oak, chestnut, maple, beech, and birch. The little valleys and the swamps, the tracts of sand and clay offered conditions favorable to the growth of many different kinds of trees, of which pine, according to Higginson, "was the most plentiful of all wood and the most useful to the colonists." Altogether, these formed a primeval forest whose extent and variety and solemn grandeur excited the wonder and the admiration of the newly-arrived Englishmen. But the needs of the colonists made great inroads upon these mighty forests. The building of houses, and ships, and wharves, the constant demand for firewood, and the sending great quantities of timber back to England in the ships that brought out supplies to the colonists, coopers and cleavers of timber being sent out by the company in London to prepare it for shipping, soon made an appreciable difference in the character of the main, and from various items recorded in the first decade after the settling of Charlestown, we must infer that the proportion of cleared and grass land was great in Somerville.

In the list of the inhabitants of Charlestown in 1633 appears the name of Nicholas Stowers, herdsman, whose duties were "to drive the herd forth to their food in the main every morning, and bring them into town every evening." If the main had been an "uncouth wilderness," like the country farther back, or even an unbroken forest, the poor cows and goats would have suffered as much from the lack of proper food as did their owners in the first hard year after their arrival. But we have abundant testimony in the early records that the "cattle did thrive marvelously well."

Still more conclusive is the fact that in 1637 a large tract of

land lying between the Winter Hill road, now Broadway, and Cambridge was divided into "rights of pasturage," and after this the main was called the common.

But the destruction of the forest was so great that it was early necessary to take steps to prevent the needless waste of trees, and in 1636 it was voted in town meeting that a "fine of 5 shillings be imposed for every tree felled and not cut up." But several years later, when one Willoughby was building a ship, the town, to encourage the enterprise, gave him liberty to take timber from the common, without being obliged to cut up the tops of the trees.

And so the primeval forest was cut away, a second growth succeeding, to fall in its turn before the woodman's axe, and the cleared land slowly increased in extent until the Revolution. During the siege of Boston, when the colonial troops were encamped for nine months on the Somerville hills, the demand for firewood was great, and the last of the forest trees disappeared. The devastation wrought in Somerville during the siege is plainly set forth in a letter by Rev. William Emerson, written in the late summer of 1775. He says: "Who would have thought, twelve months past, that all Cambridge and Charlestown would be covered over with American camps, and cut up into forts and intrenchments, and all the lands, fields, orchards laid common,—horses and cattle feeding in the choicest mowing land, whole fields of corn eaten down to the ground, and large parks of well-regulated locusts cut down for firewood and other public uses." General Green, who commanded the troops on Prospect Hill, wrote December 31, 1775: "We have suffered prodigiously for want of wood. Many regiments have been obliged to eat their provisions raw for want of fuel to cook them, and notwithstanding we have burnt up all the fences and cut down all the trees for a mile around the camp, our sufferings have been inconceivable." And the following winter, when the Hessians were prisoners of war on Winter Hill, they used for firewood the last of the walnut trees, which gave the original name of Walnut Hill to what is now College Hill.

Fruit trees and ornamental trees were also sacrificed to keep

the poorly-clad soldiers from freezing, and the forests never again regained possession of the thoroughly denuded country.

But the kindly forces of nature work unceasingly, and soon the swamps and waste places, the roadsides and pasture walls were gladdened by the presence of those trees that could thrive under the new conditions. And this is the growth that abounded when the farming district of Charlestown in 1842 was made into the town of Somerville.

The juniper, which grows equally well on dry hills or in deep swamps, and the white birch, which flourishes in the poorest soil, grew freely everywhere; and these, with the elm, the typical New England tree that grows wherever a rich, moist soil receives the wind-blown seeds, were the most common trees.

A tract of salt marsh still remained on Washington street, where Lincoln field now is, and from there, through Concord and Oak streets, to Prospect street and the Cambridge line, was a lonesome tract of swampy land covered with low trees and bushes. On Prospect street, which was first called Pine street, was a large grove of pine trees, the last of which were cut down only a few years ago. Polly's Swamp was the largest tract of wild land extending along the valley north of Central street, toward Walnut Hill. Here all swamp-loving trees and shrubs were found, bound together by horse brier and brambles, so as to be almost impenetrable in many places. The birches and junipers grew far up onto the north slope of Spring Hill, the whole wild and extensive enough to furnish good gunning for small game.

Along the line of the Revolutionary forts on Prospect and Central Hills to Winter Hill were many old gnarled button-pear trees. These seldom grow spontaneously in Massachusetts, and it was popularly believed that they came from the seeds of pears eaten by the soldiers when quartered on these hills.

Rand's woods, on Elm street, below the Powder House, was the only grove of any extent on high land, and this was composed principally of evergreens, pitch and white pines, and junipers, with a few maples and oaks. But the number of forest trees in the new town was really very small. Probably not a

walnut, chestnut, hemlock, or spruce was growing wild at that time, plentiful as they must have been here originally, and in the opinion of Frank Henderson, Thomas Young, and other old residents, there were more trees in Somerville when it celebrated its semi-centennial in 1892 than there were in 1842.

But everywhere was a profusion of those shrubs and low bushes that make so much of the beauty and variety of New England vegetation. From the spice-bush in April to the weird witch-hazel of November was a succession of fair flowers and bright berries, and our country lanes were picturesque, if our hills were barren and our pastures bare of trees. In those years bushels of blueberries and huckleberries were picked every summer in the pastures round Oak and Springfield streets, cranberries grew abundantly in the meadows where the American Tube Works now stand, and everywhere was a wealth of wild roses, which the children gathered by the basketful, to be distilled into rose-water. One old resident of East Somerville remembers that the cardinal flower grew luxuriantly on the banks of the old canal, where it passed near her home on Mystic avenue, and Henry Munroe, a native of Somerville, and for many years a teacher of botany in the Chicago high schools, writes that in all his botanical trips, east and west, he has seldom seen a more beautiful sight than the bed of the old canal on Ten Hills Farm, when in early spring it was white as a snowdrift with the starry blossoms of the blood-root.

And here I would like to read a few verses from a song written by Mrs. Nancy T. Munroe, whose house on Walnut street was the first one built on the west slope of Prospect Hill. Walnut street was one of the original rangeways laid out in 1680. It was very steep and narrow, and this song was written in 1851 or '52, when the county commissioners ordered that it should be widened and the grade made easier, thus changing the country hillside lane into a town road. No description I could write would give so graphic a picture of the wildness and beauty of our narrow roads at that time:—

A FAREWELL SONG TO THE LANE.

A song for the lane,
The green old lane,
That led from the hill
To the level plain.
O gentle muse, ere it fade from sight,
One feeble song to its praise indite.

The green old lane,
It towered so high,
The trees at the top
Seemed to touch the sky.

On the moss-grown wall
At either side
The vines grew wild
In native pride.
The wild rose blossomed,
The locust tree,
With its graceful foliage,
Was fair to see.
A brook crossed the lane
Near the drooping willow,
Two planks formed a bridge
O'er this placid billow.

A hawthorn grew
In that green old lane,
Just midway it stood
'Tween the hill and the plain.
A moss-grown stone 'neath its shadow lay,
And children played there many a day.

Alas! alas! for the green old lane!
I never shall look on it thus again.
The wants of the people the town must meet,
The pleasant lane must be made a street.

They came with the axe, the plough, and spade,
And heavy stones on the brook they laid.
The willow branches they lopped away,
And the hawthorn fell ere close of day.
They ploughed up the vines all covered with berries,
They cut down the tree all filled with cherries.

My heart grows sad
At the beauty gone,
But the work of improvement
Must still go on.
We must give up romance
For the good of the town,
And the dear old lane
Must be leveled down.
So a sad farewell to the green old lane
That led from the hill to the level plain.

In 1859 Henry H. Babcock was elected principal of the High School. He was a skilled botanist, a zealous collector, and knew the wild flowers of the neighborhood of Boston in their native haunts. Under his enthusiastic teaching, the meadows and swamps and hidden nooks of Somerville were explored as never before, and what floral treasures still lingered within the limits of the fast-growing town were brought to the little botany room in the old High School building. Here many a happy and profitable hour was spent after the school session was ended in puzzling over perplexing specimens, and in learning of that divine law which links the smallest fern with the mightiest tree of the forest, and without which any scientific classification would be impossible. When Mr. Babcock left the High School, Miss Mary D. Davis had charge of the botany classes, and her great interest in and enthusiasm for her favorite science made her a worthy successor of her former teacher. Edward Everett Edgerley, of the class of '63, was the most zealous collector in those days, and if his herbarium was available for reference, it would give the most complete list ever made of the wild flowers of Somerville in the early sixties.

The most distinctive feature of the Somerville flora at that time was that of the salt marshes along the Mystic river and the mill-pond on the north and east boundaries of the town. Most of the plants growing there were of more interest to the botanist than to the lover of wild flowers, the seashore golden-rod, perhaps the most brilliant of the golden-rods, and the marsh rosemary or sea-lavender being the only ones whose blossoms would attract attention from the ordinary passer-by. But the glaux, the atriplex, and the salicornias, mere weeds as they would be called, possessed an equal charm for one whose eye and mind were trained to appreciate every detail of the insignificant flower or the curiously-constructed seed.

Perhaps the greatest number of species was found in Polly's Swamp, many water-loving plants growing there. But the Ten Hills Farm district was the favorite haunt of the spring flowers, columbine and bloodroot, violets and early saxifrage growing without stint, while the shad bush and the wild cherry blossoms were greatly prized.

In the little strip of Palfry's Swamp that was left within the Somerville limits were a number of choice plants not found elsewhere. Among them may be mentioned the swamp azalea, the wild sensitive plant, the meadow beauty, and the dodder, and the High School scholars of to-day would be obliged to tramp many a long mile before they could find four such interesting flowers in our locality.

Gilman's field, as the large vacant lot on Walnut street, north of the Lowell railroad, was called, was another favorite tramping ground, its rocky ledges and boggy hollows revealing very diverse varieties of plants. There were the wild currant and gooseberry, the elder, button bush, the sweet pepper bush, and wild roses without stint, while equally interesting were the wild oats, the ground-nut, and the orchid that grew most abundantly in Somerville, the *spiranthes cernua*. But the red-letter day in our botanical calendar was when the fringed gentian was found here, where New Pearl street now crosses Walnut, and it seemed an act of graceful condescension for a flower sung by Bryant, Whittier, and Emerson to grace the wayside of our prosaic town.

The ferns grew freely in many parts of the town, but the favorite haunt of this interesting family was the south bank of the Lowell railroad, east of the Sycamore-street bridge, where the railroad is cut through a ledge of slate-stone. All the common ferns grew along the brook at the foot of the banking, but the real treasures were found in the crevices of the ledge above.

Rand's woods, already mentioned, always repaid us for a visit, the low cornel and the lady's slipper being the choicest flowers growing here.

But the rear of Mr. Holland's farm, back of where the elevated railroad car houses now stand, furnished us with more interesting specimens than any other spot in West Somerville. Here Alewife brook separated the farm from Cambridge, and in the spring were found many water-loving plants, among others, the pitcher plant, that most curious of all New England wild flowers; the marsh marigold, the arrowhead, the forget-me-not, and the buck bean, perhaps the choicest and most beautiful wild flower then growing in Somerville, in spite of its commonplace name; and Colonel Higginson doubtless thought he lavished high praise on this dainty flower when he said it possessed a certain "garden-like elegance."

In all long-settled countries there is always a large class of plants that become naturalized and are as common, and often much more tenacious of life, than the original occupants of the soil. Many of these plants possess blossoms of real beauty, but they also include most of the common weeds, chickweed, mayweed, and pigweed, burdock and thistles, pursley and sorrel, which follow the plough in all temperate regions as surely as do the planted crops. A number of these naturalized plants are natives of the Western states or of tropical America, but many more came originally from Europe, and were introduced in various ways. A few were brought over by the first colonists to give a little touch of home to their dreary abodes in a far-away land. The sweet briar and the barberry bush are of this number, and were among the first English plants to become naturalized in their adopted country. The mints, tansy, and plantain were evidently brought over on account of their medicinal value, and

the wild mustard and carrot, ornamental as they now are to fields and waysides, are escapes from our forefathers' vegetable gardens. Other interesting plants of this class which are still occasionally found in our city are the alsike, that pretty pink clover which originated in Sweden, where it is considered one of the most valuable of forage plants; the brilliant cone-flower, or black-eyed Susan, a native of our Western prairies, and unknown in New England fifty years ago; the mullein, the bladder campion, and the sky-blue succory, which Dr. Bigelow, who appreciated every charm of the flowers he so faithfully described, called an elegant plant. As for the field daisy, the buttercup, and the dandelion, they hold a much warmer place in our affections than do many of the choice native species. James Russell Lowell sings of the dandelion:—

“Dear common flower, that grow’st beside the way,
Fringing the dusty road with harmless gold.

* * * * *

“Thou art more dear to me
Than all the prouder summer blooms may be.
My childhood’s earliest thoughts are linked with thee.”

But the wild flowers have disappeared more rapidly and more completely than did the forests 250 years ago, and to-day it would be more difficult to coax back within our city limits the orchids and gentians and ferns, the meadow beauty and the pitcher plant of forty years ago, than to start a forest of oaks, beeches, and hickories.

CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS WITHOUT THE PENINSULA
REVOLUTIONARY PERIOD.

Frank Mortimer Hawes

(Continued.)

In closing our account of this period, it remains to speak of the Alewife Brook and the Gardner Row schools, both at the upper end of Charlestown. After 1790, when the four schools were designated by numbers, these were known as No. 3 and No. 4.

As we have before stated, the Alewife Brook district probably comprised that part of our city which lies west of College avenue. It extended well up into Arlington, and took in that part of Menotomy which belonged to Charlestown. The Gardner Row district extended along by the Mystic ponds as far as old Woburn line.

Like the Milk Row school, the affairs of these districts were managed, for the most part, by a local committeeman, who was usually selected at the annual town meeting in May. The selectmen were supposed to have control of all school affairs, and at times, when dissatisfaction arose, mostly from economical reasons, no local officer would be appointed to relieve them.

In 1754, when our account begins, Nathaniel Francis and Joseph Phipps were representing these two districts. The former had been elected as early as 1744, and served, with some interruptions, for seven years. The last mention we find of him is May 5, 1755, when it was agreed that his account for wood, etc., for the school without the Neck, amounting to £2 6s 4d, be allowed. This gentleman belonged to a family that gained more prominence on the Cambridge side of the line than in Charlestown; Paige and Wyman both speak of him. He died September 2, 1764, aged seventy-one, and was buried in West Cambridge.

Mr. Phipps served continuously from 1751 to 1757. He was a descendant of Solomon Phipps, an early settler of Charlestown, and in previous chapters we have given the family due prominence. According to Wyman, he was the father of

Frances, who became the wife of Timothy Trumbull, master of the town school in 1680-2. Mr. Phipps died June 27, 1795, aged seventy-two.

May 12, 1755, Mr. Phipps received "an order for £5 4s 9d, l. m., for Mr. Jabez Whittemore keeping the school [Gardner Row?] without the Neck the year past." Doubtless this is the Jabez Whittemore who in 1756 "was approbated as inn-holder at his house without the Neck, where his father lived."

Mr. Francis's place on the board was filled by Henry Putnam, who, according to Wyman, was a new-comer from Danvers, and of the Israel Putnam stock. He continued in office for the next ten years, being elected for the last time in 1764. During this decade he distributed for his district £8 3s of the town's money yearly. Wyman is doubtless in error when he says Mr. Putnam was teaching without the Neck in 1760.

During these same ten years Mr. Phipps had been followed, in turn, by James Fosdick, Captain John Hancock, and Joseph Lamson, the first of whom served for the year 1757-8, the second from 1758 to 1760, and the third for the remaining five years, when, along with Mr. Putnam, he disappeared from the board.

Among many entries at this time, perhaps the most interesting is the following: April 3, 1758. "Agreed to allow James Fosdick as one of the committee without the Neck for school-master, benches, firewood, and house rent amounting to £6 lawful money, being his proportion." In 1760 these two schools were receiving about the same amount of the town's money, a little more than £7 each. The Milk Row school was receiving, through Mr. Kent, £10 6s.

We have not thought it necessary to give an extended reference to these gentlemen. Wyman devotes several pages to the Fosdicks. James Fosdick (1716-1784) was prominent in town affairs, and left a good estate. In his inventory we read of a mansion house, two shops, three acres or more, near Prospect Hill, etc. We have had occasion in a previous article to speak of a Mr. Hancock who was teaching in 1724 in the Stoneham precinct. According to Wyman, that was the Rev. John Hancock, later of Braintree, and father of Governor Hancock.

This Captain Hancock (1699-1776) was of the same Lexington branch and a cousin of the governor's father.

May 14, 1765, Walter Russell and Isaac Mallet were elected to the board, the former for the Alewife Brook school, the latter for the one at Gardner Row. Mr. Mallet served three years, and was succeeded, May, 1768, by John Lamson, who continued in office for five years. In 1773 Mr. Fosdick was serving in his place, but that year it was decided to do away with a local committee, and it was voted "that the selectmen manage the school without the Neck, and proportion the money among the inhabitants as they shall judge equitable."

Lamson is another good old Charlestown name. Joseph Lamson (1728-1789) and John Lamson (1732-1759), according to Wyman, were cousins. The same authority makes the erroneous statement that the former was schoolmaster outside the Neck in 1769 and 1772. All the gentlemen thus far named in this paper served with Samuel Kent during his long and faithful term of nineteen years in the Milk Row district.

Walter Russell's name occurs on the town books in connection with school matters, excepting the years 1771 and 1772, for thirteen years from the time of his first election. In 1778 he was succeeded by his brother, Philemon Russell.

Lieutenant Samuel Cutter was serving in 1771 and 1772, and again in 1781 and 1782. This gentleman (see Cutter Genealogy, p. 54), a man of prominence in the Menotomy district, was the grandfather of Edward and Fitch Cutter, whose names figure on the early records of Somerville. The name of Mallet is precious to Somerville for its associations with the old Mill, or Powder House.

Miss Carr, in her excellent monograph on the family (*Historic Leaves*, Vol. II., p. 10), has been led into an error concerning the above-mentioned Isaac Mallet by her authorities, Frothingham and Wyman. In saying that he taught school at the Neck in 1767, they make two mistakes. In the first place, there was no school at the Neck in those days, and, secondly, the record distinctly says, under date of April 6, 1767, that Isaac Mallet received £8 10s 4d as his proportion of the school money

(for the district which he was representing as committeeman). If further proof of this and similar misstatements be necessary, we need but consider that Mr. Mallet was forty years of age at this time, a man of means and influence, and was holding various town offices of importance. The writer believes he is correct in affirming that, as a general thing, male teachers in these outlying districts at this time, as well as long afterwards, were young men, many of them graduates or students of the college near by, who were but "feeling their way" before the real battle of life was to begin.

The above-named Walter Russell, son of Joseph, whom we have mentioned (Vol. III., p. 18) as teaching school in 1724, not only served on the committee, but was a worthy follower of his father in wielding the ferule. The first date we are sure of is May 2, 1774, when he received an order for his amount for keeping part of the school without the Neck, £8, and his associate at the Gardner Row school, Daniel Reed, under same date, received £5 6s 8d as his amount "for keeping another part of the school." January 26, 1776, Edward Gardner is allowed the same sum for keeping this school, and Walter Russell £8 6s for keeping the one at Alewife Brook. These dates prove to us that these schools were not closed, at least for any length of time, during the excitement which prevailed after the battle of Bunker Hill, when old Charlestown lay in ashes. Daniel Reed was the representative of a family that for several generations lived at the upper end of Charlestown, near the ponds. He was, perhaps, the son or grandson of Daniel and Mary (Converse) Reed; the son was born February 19, 1732.

In February, 1778, Walter Russell was acting as town clerk, a position which he did not hold long, as, May 20, 1779, we read that Samuel Swan was serving in that capacity. The last time we find Mr. Russell's name associated with school affairs was in 1780 (already referred to as the year of greatly-inflated values), when the district under his management received £317 8s 6d of the £6,400 appropriated for schools!

Walter Russell, son of Joseph and Mary (Robbins) Russell, was born January 24, 1737, and died at the early age of forty-

five, March 5, 1782. For his second wife, the mother of his children, he married Hannah Adams (*Historic Leaves*, Vol. III., p. 89). Dr. Paige, the historian of Cambridge, says that Joseph Russell, the father, lived on the north side of the main road in Menotomy, on the first estate west from the river (Alewife brook), but in 1730 exchanged estates with Captain Samuel Whittemore, and removed into the borders of Charlestown, now Somerville, where his home was on the road leading to Winter Hill. The ancient homestead of this branch of the Russell family was destroyed by fire not many years ago. Its site, on the easterly corner of North street and Broadway, is marked by a well and an old pump, which is still standing.

About the time Edward Gardner was teaching in his home district, others of his name renewed a family interest in the school by accepting positions on the school board. As early as 1738 (Vol. III., p. 16), Henry Gardner was a member of the local committee outside the Neck, and for five consecutive years previous to May, 1753, was serving his district. October 10, 1776, Samuel Gardner was serving in this capacity, and his name is found upon the records every year, I believe, up to 1782.

In August, 1779, Philemon Russell received £18, and June, 1780, Edward Gardner, £14 19s 6d (probably for teaching in their respective districts, as Samuel Gardner and Amos Warren were on the school board at the time). Edward Gardner in 1782, and as late as 1786, served on the committee, and Mr. Russell's name occurs in the same connection, year by year, to the end of the period which we are considering. Another teacher, in one or the other of these districts, was James Gardner, who received, through Collector Hawkins, pay for his services, August, 1786.

We have mentioned the name of Amos Warren. He was serving in 1779, and again in 1784. August 2, 1784, Amos Warren and Samuel Gardner are allowed to keep tavern.

We are justified in concluding that, previous to 1786, there was no public school building in these two districts. Several references to private quarters that were hired for school purposes are found upon the town records.

December 6, 1784. "Voted that the school at the upper end of the town be placed at Mr. Samuel Swan's, he to board the master at six shillings per week, and find a room for the school."

Voted to give Samuel Gardner five shillings a week to board Ruth Jones to December, 1785 (see *Historic Leaves*, Vol. III., p. 68).

December 14, 1785. "The school kept at Phebe Russell's received £8 8s."

May 4, 1785. "Voted to give Coll. N. Hawkins for school kept at John Swan's £10 16s."

In the warrant (February 28, 1785) for the coming town meeting, we find the following: "To know the minds of the town, what they will do with regard to two petitions presented by the people at the upper end of the town requesting that one or two schoolhouses may be built there." March 7 it was voted that two schools be built agreeably to this petition. The committee appointed for this purpose were "Mr. Samuel Gardiner, Mr. William Whittemore, Coll. Nathaniel Hawkins, Lieut. Samuel Cutter, and Mr. Seth Wyman." These gentlemen seem to have attended promptly to their duty, for May 1, 1786, it was voted to allow Captain Cordis's account for building the schoolhouses without the Neck, £80. The following November Messrs. Whittemore and Philemon Russell were empowered to lay a floor, make seats, and lay a hearth at the Russell's school. We believe this was the first time in the history of Charlestown that a school building was designated, although unofficially, by the name of a person or family. A few references to these schools, though trifling, may not be out of place.

June 3, 1788, Mr. Russell receives an order for work at the school, £2 9s 10d, and Seth Wyman for wood, £1 12s. In October Mr. Whittemore's bill for work at the school amounted to £3 5s 6d. April 4, 1791, Mr. Russell's bill for cutting and carting wood to the school No. 3 and repairs amounts to £2 19s. The next April, for furnishing three and one-half cords of wood to their respective schools, Mr. Russell receives £3 9s, and Mr. Wyman £4 4s. This makes the price of wood (delivered), in the time of our first president, from five to six dollars per cord.

January 5, 1789: "Voted that the school money for the past year be divided according to the taxes, and that Nathaniel Hawkins, Samuel Swan, Esq., and Philemon Russell be a committee to make division accordingly. Benjamin Hurd, Jr., & Seth Wyman were added to this committee."

October 19, 1789. "Voted that Coll. Hawkins, Philemon Russell, and Seth Wyman provide masters for the schools outside the Neck."

Philemon Russell, youngest son of Joseph, and brother of Walter Russell, was born August 1, 1740, and married June 28, 1764, Elizabeth Wyman, who survived her husband many years, and died in 1825. The many references we have made to his name show that he was active in town affairs, and particularly interested in the schools. We shall have occasion to refer to him and his son, Philemon R. Russell, in our next period. He was licensed as a victualler, was employed by the town as a surveyor, and lived in the house which stood on the spot where his grandson, Levi Russell, erected a more modern structure, which is now owned by the city of Somerville. Mr. Russell died in 1797. His will, dated May 27, was probated June 7 of that year.

Our notes on the name of Gardner are exceedingly meagre for a family of so much prominence. It seems to have started in Woburn. Richard Gardner, of that town, and his son Henry were the grandfather and father, respectively, of Henry (1698-1763), who lived at the upper end of Charlestown. His brother was the Rev. John Gardner, of Stowe. By his wife Lucy, daughter of John Fowle, he had five sons, Edward, Samuel, John, Henry, and James.

Edward Gardner, born in Charlestown March, 1739, married Mehitable Blodgett, of Lexington, and died January 23, 1806. It was he whose name figures in these pages. His brother Samuel, born 1741, died at the age of fifty. He, also, as we have attempted to show, rendered valuable service to his section of the town. James, the youngest son of Henry Gardner, according to the family genealogist, graduated from Harvard College, and was long located at Lynn as a physician, where he died in 1831.

By way of recapitulation, we add the following table, which is a continuation of the one on page 16, Vol. III. The larger sum was the whole amount appropriated for schools; the less sum the amount devoted to schools beyond the Neck.

Committee of management for the schools outside the Neck:—

May 13, 1754, Nathaniel Francis, Samuel Kent, Joseph Phipps; £180; £24.

May, 1755, and May, 1756, Samuel Kent, Joseph Phipps, Henry Putnam (same amounts).

May 10, 1757, Samuel Kent, Henry Putnam, James Fosdick (same amounts).

May, 1758, and May, 1759, Samuel Kent, Henry Putnam, Captain John Hancock (same amounts).

May, 1760, '61, '62, '63, '64, Samuel Kent, Henry Putnam, Joseph Lamson; £180; £25 6s 8d.

May, 1765, '66, '67, Isaac Mallet, Samuel Kent, Walter Russell; £180; £34 10s.

May, 1768, '69, '70, Samuel Kent, John Lamson, Walter Russell (same amounts).

May, 1771, and May, 1772, Peter Tufts, Jr., John Lamson, Lieutenant Samuel Cutter (same amounts).

May, 1773, '74, '75. The selectmen, a committee for the schools within and without the Neck.

1776, '77, John Hay, Timothy Tufts, Walter Russell, Samuel Gardner; £60 (for all the schools).

May 11, 1778, Caleb Call, Samuel Tufts, Samuel Gardner, Philemon Russell; £140 (for all the schools).

May 20, 1779, Samuel Tufts, Samuel Gardner, Amos Warren; £500 (for all the schools).

[Committee within the Neck, Nathaniel Gorham, Eben Breed, David Wood.]

May 8, 1780. "The selectmen, with Samuel Gardner, a committee to regulate the schools"; £6,400 (£400, l. m.).

1781. The selectmen and Lieutenant Samuel Cutter a committee for the schools.

"Voted that Hon. Nathaniel Gorham be a committee to raise £100 for the support of the schools."

May 6, 1782. The selectmen and Edward Gardner; £120 (for all the schools).

May 12, 1783 (outside), Timothy Tufts, Philemon Russell, Amos Warren; £125 (for all schools).

May 10, 1784, the selectmen (same amount).

May 4, 1785, the selectmen; £180 (for all schools).

May 15, 1786, the selectmen and Seth Wyman; £185 (for all schools).

May, 1787, the selectmen, Seth Wyman, William Whittemore (same amount).

May 26, 1788, the selectmen, Philemon Russell, Seth Wyman; £150 (for all schools).

May 14, 1789, the selectmen, Philemon Russell (same amount); Milk Row, £31 2s 8d; Alewife Brook, £14 17s 2d; Gardner Row, £14 18s 10d.

May, 1790, '91, same committee; £150, "exclusive of the income of the school fund."

May 14, 1792, the selectmen, Richard Devens, Samuel Dexter, Philemon Russell, Seth Wyman; £225, "including the school fund."

Apportioned February, 1793, for the year preceding, Milk Row, £41; Alewife Brook, £20; Gardner Row, £20.

THE OLD ROYALL HOUSE, MEDFORD

By Charles D. Elliot

The celebration of the 275th anniversary of the founding of Medford brought with it the organization of a society for the purchase and restoration of the ancient Royall mansion, now the headquarters of the Medford Daughters of the Revolution; its four and one-third acres having been lotted and placed on sale by its owner.

The old house was built some two centuries ago. Isaac Royall, a merchant from Antigua, afterwards bought it, probably about 1737, and remodeled it after an English mansion in Antigua, from whence he brought with him twenty-seven slaves, whose old brick quarters, with its huge fireplace, is probably the last existing vestige of slavery in Massachusetts.

Colonel Isaac Royall, Jr., son of the merchant, was a Loyalist, and at the breaking out of the Revolution went to England, leaving for disposal by his agents, among other "chattels," his slaves Stephen, George, Hagar, Mira, Betsey, and Nancy, probably among the last owned or kept in these parts.

Colonel Royall endowed Harvard College with 2,000 acres of land, founding thereby the "Royall" professorship of law, which was the beginning of the present Harvard Law School.

This ancient Royall estate was once part of Governor Winthrop's Ten Hills Farm, and was then part of Charlestown. In the Revolution the old mansion was for a time the headquarters of General Charles Lee, who afterwards moved to the old Oliver Tufts house; while Lee had the Royall mansion, it was facetiously named Hobgoblin Hall.

It is a relic all are interested in preserving, and it is believed and hoped that this society will succeed in purchasing and restoring this historic place, which was during the last century considered one of the "grandest mansions in Massachusetts."

Officers of Somerville Historical Society

1905-1906

| | |
|-------------------------|------------------------|
| President | Frank M. Hawes |
| First Vice-President | Levi L. Hawes |
| Second Vice-President | James F. Whitney |
| Third Vice-President | John F. Ayer |
| Treasurer | Seth Mason |
| Recording Secretary | Mrs. William B. Holmes |
| Corresponding Secretary | Florence E. Carr |
| Librarian and Curator | Alfred M. Outer |

Councils-Large

| | | |
|-------------------|---------------|--------------------|
| Charles D. Elliot | Anna F. Vinal | L. Roger Westworth |
|-------------------|---------------|--------------------|

Committee on Historic Sites

| | | |
|------------------------|-------------------|---------------|
| J. C. Hayden, Chairman | Charles D. Elliot | Edward Oliver |
|------------------------|-------------------|---------------|

Essays and Addresses

| | |
|------------------------|-------------------|
| John F. Ayer, Chairman | Charles D. Elliot |
| W. B. Brigham | Seth Mason |

Mrs. J. F. Ayer

Library and Cabinet

| | | |
|---------------------------|-------------|------------------|
| Alfred M. Outer, Chairman | Edwin Hayes | Mrs. Helen Heald |
|---------------------------|-------------|------------------|

Photographs

| | |
|-------------------------------|------------------|
| Benjamin F. Freeman, Chairman | James F. Whitney |
|-------------------------------|------------------|

Albert L. Hadden

Press and Clippings

| | |
|---------------------------|---------------|
| W. F. Jones, Chairman | Anna F. Vinal |
| Mrs. Emma Prichard Halsey | Lucy M. Stone |

Committee on Publications

| | |
|----------------------------|----------------|
| Sam. Walter Ford, Chairman | Frank M. Hawes |
| Sara A. Stone | Samuel Barje |

Military Records

| | | |
|------------------------|-----------------|---------------|
| J. H. Dussan, Chairman | Alfred M. Outer | Mary A. Haley |
|------------------------|-----------------|---------------|

House

| | |
|---------------------------|--------------------|
| Mrs. Isaac Ruth, Chairman | Mrs. E. F. Hammond |
|---------------------------|--------------------|

Mrs. F. DeWitt Lapham

Hospitality

| | |
|----------------------------------|----------------------|
| Mrs. William B. Holmes, Chairman | Mrs. L. B. Pillsbury |
|----------------------------------|----------------------|

Mrs. Mae C. Fraser

Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

July, 1905

Vol. IV

No. 2

CONTENTS.

| | PAGE |
|---|--------------------------------|
| PERSONAL EXPERIENCE OF A UNION VETERAN | <i>Levi Lindley Hawes</i> 25 |
| CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1793 | <i>Frank Mortimer Hawes</i> 38 |
| NEIGHBORHOOD SKETCH NUMBER 8 | <i>Joseph H. Clark</i> 47 |

HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee

PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL EARLE

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. IV.

JULY, 1905

No. 2

PERSONAL EXPERIENCE OF A UNION VETERAN

By Levi Lindley Hawes

About 12 o'clock one August night in 1862, as I sat in my tent at Fort Jackson, La., making out a Post Return—or perhaps writing to “the girl I left behind me”—I was interrupted by the quiet entrance of the commandant. “Ye gods! what do I see?” I exclaimed, as the lieutenant-colonel stood before me in full evening (or night) dress. “I thought you were asleep hours ago.” “I have been asleep,” he replied, “but when I awoke and saw a light in your tent, I said to myself, this ‘witching hour of night’ is a proper time for me to ask Levi what prompted or induced him to enter the service. You, an only son, left a delightful, happy home,—I simply left the state of Maine. Why did you enlist in the military service?” After an hour’s friendly chat, I think the colonel retired in the firm conviction that I had a valid reason for connecting myself as sergeant in company I, Thirteenth Maine Regiment Infantry. With varied phraseology this pertinent question has been fired at me scores of times. In this connection permit me to read extracts from two letters written in September, 1861.

(Extract.)

Bangor, Me., September 7, 1861.

My dear Levi: You seem to think it is your duty to go into the army, and by what you write I judge that you have decided to go. Well, go, if you think you can endure the exposure and hardships of camp life; and may God bless you in all your endeavors to serve our country, and give you health, strength, and ability equal to your calling. If you do enter your country’s service, attach yourself to a cavalry squadron, by all means. I

send you a paper to call your attention to the notice of a company which is to be recruited in Maine; and you will see that it is more advantageous to enlist here than in Massachusetts. If you wish to obtain a situation in this company, you had better apply at once. Let the store go.

Please write very soon, if you do not come home, for I shall feel anxious to hear how you succeed in enlisting.

Mother.

(Extract.)

Boston, September 10, 1861.

My dear Mother: Your letter of the 7th inst. received this noon has filled my heart with joy.

A thousand thanks for such words as these—words both of consent and blessing. I surely have no desire to bathe my hands in my brother's blood, but when he madly threatens to destroy, not only me, but also the entire family—having used every other means to dissuade him from his cruel purpose in vain—shall I fail or refuse to bring forward the last and most potent argument—the sword—in self-defence? God forbid. If I perish, let it be said that I died in the faithful discharge of my duty. Duty is my war-cry; but having unsheathed my sword, I shall throw away the scabbard; and when my duty is completely done, I will bury the sword. It does seem to me that it is my duty to offer my services to my country; and, God helping me, I will never disgrace my more than Spartan mother. My whole soul cries "go." You say "go." And does not the providence of God indicate that it is my duty to rally for the strife?

Oh, the terrible, the thrice terrible necessity! But it must be met.

Yours affectionately,

Levi.

But there is a long gap between this period and the beginning of my history.

In 1833 two notable events occurred. First, the Anti-Slavery Society was born. Then, according to the record—which I have been assured is absolutely correct—a boy was born in the town of Union, Me., Lincoln county (now Knox), adjoin-

ing Hope, adjoining Liberty, and in process of time this boy necessarily became, in the main, a hopeful union, Lincoln, liberty-loving, American citizen.

On that April day, when a gun-carriage went rumbling past my store, corner Beacon and Tremont streets, bearing the bodies of Ladd and Whitney, killed in Baltimore, I recorded a vow. As soon thereafter as possible, I turned the key on my mercantile business, and on the twenty-first day of October, 1861, my name was writ large on the enlistment roll; and from that date my time and means were devoted to the business of inducing men to enlist in the Thirteenth Maine Regiment, which was to be attached to General Butler's division for special service,—until the regiment was mustered into the United States service at the arsenal in Augusta,—December 31, 1861. Here we lived in tents half buried in snow, often drilling in snow knee deep, with the mercury at or below zero, till February 18, 1862, at which date we dug ourselves out of several feet of snow and ice and took train for Boston. About midnight we found ourselves in the "Cradle of Liberty," where, it was supposed, we were to be rocked to sleep, but I don't remember to have seen a single sleeping soldier that night. On the twentieth a battalion of the regiment (four companies) (Colonel Dow and Major Hesselstine) was marched to Long wharf and down between decks of the good steamship Mississippi, in which for many days and nights we were literally rocked to sleep. (The six companies of the regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel Rust commanding, sailed from New York.) The next day our voyage began, and before it ended the boys experienced all the charms of "life on the ocean wave, and a home on the rolling deep." As we rolled and pitched on the passage to Fort Monroe, many a luckless soldier went skating down the icy deck till the lee bulwarks ordered a peremptory halt. The order to halt was not always obeyed with such alacrity. At Fort Monroe we received General Butler and staff. We had previously discovered that the Thirty-first Massachusetts Regiment was stowed somewhere down forward.

At 10 o'clock p. m. on the twenty-fifth, the engines began to throb, and shortly the capes were left astern. Our final (?)

departure was taken, and Ship Island was announced as our destination.

About 7 o'clock p. m. on the twenty-sixth I was standing in the lee of the pilot house, greatly interested in the tumbling of a ragged sea. Suddenly, through the gloom, I thought I saw "white water" on our starboard bow, and I said to the sergeant who stood near me, "We are in the midst of breakers," and putting my hands to my mouth, sailor fashion, I shouted, "Breakers!" Looking through the pilot house window, I saw the quartermaster throwing his wheel to starboard. Had he not started his wheel when he did, these lines would not have been written; for it was a moment later that the captain from the fore rigging bawled first, "Hard a-port," then, "Hard a-starboard." As the ship came about she fell into the trough of the sea, and for a short time, which seemed an age, she was practically on her beam ends. The sergeant vanished as if by magic. "Man overboard" trembled on my lips, but I checked myself, realizing the futility of raising an alarm at that juncture. Wiping the brine from my eyes with my sleeve, I discovered something in the lee scuppers. Edging down carefully I seized it; whereupon a voice called out as well as it could through a bit of the Atlantic Ocean that had taken refuge in his mouth, "That's my hair." "God bless you, sergeant," I said, "are you hurt?" "No," he said, "but I am nearly drowned." "Well, now go below," I said, "and be a good boy." He went. An hour later we had a full grown gale bellowing after us, and I remained on deck to watch the splendid behavior of the ship and to listen to the full chorus which seemed to be performing for my special benefit. A gale at sea always sends me to the key of G. Finally, chilled to the marrow, I had to yield to the blast and go below. As I stepped down between decks, behold a whole menagerie in full voice. Every conceivable sound proceeded from hundreds of sick and scared soldiers. Hanging my dripping clothes where I hoped they would dry over night, I flung myself into the bunk already occupied by four somewhat demoralized sergeants, thus adding one more specimen to the "floating show." The motion of the ship soon lulled me into a sixteen-knot sleep, from which

I was aroused by a motion not of the ship, and a hoarse whisper in my ear: "Turn out, you are wanted in the cabin. The skylight is stove in and the cabin is flooded, and the water is up nearly to the grating in the boiler room. It is four o'clock, and the devil to pay generally."

The occasion didn't seem to demand an elaborate toilet, so in the pitchy night I quickly groped my way to the cabin, and as I stepped from the companion-way into the swirling suds that swished half way up the bulkhead, the scene struck me as indescribably funny.

Officers sat about the table looking as though they had lost their best friend. Saluting, I said (unwisely, no doubt), "Gentlemen, this looks very much like a fashionable watering-place." Whereupon one with somewhat of cant in his tone said, "This is no time for frivolity or jesting."

Looking at the chevron on my sleeve, I made no audible reply, but to the bucket bearers I said, sotto voce, "They are in for how long?" "Well, we will bail them out, anyway," at which a broad smile broke out and went echoing down the cabin; and then we all "turned to," each one steering his own luck. An hour or so later I saw my frivolous friend making for the stairs. "After you, sir," rose to my lips, and halted there, while I preceded him up the winding stairs, letting my bucket, as the ship rolled, steer itself. As I reached the deck the orderly looked in my bucket and asked, "Where is your water?" "In the chaplain's starboard boot—will explain later," I replied.

At sea, accidents sometimes occur in pairs or in sets. When I returned to the cabin I found a dapper little lieutenant issuing orders—forgetting that he was not commander-in-chief of the army and navy. I stood at attention, and was about to quote a passage from an ancient volume, for I knew something was going to happen. Just then a sea struck the ship under the counter, lifted her endwise, and dropped her so suddenly that the would-be commander sat down, in his best clothes, in the not over-clean water. I turned my head to wipe away tears—or was it the dirty water he had splashed in my face?—and then sympathetically remarked, "You have dropped something, sir." He

disappeared so quickly that I failed to get more than a mental photograph of the young son of Mars, and the water closed over a stern reality.

At eight o'clock, after four hours' bailing, we were relieved and treated to a breakfast fit for the gods. As I presented my tin cup and plate to the black knight at the galley, he poured half a pint of coffee into my cup and deposited one boiled potato in the centre of my ten-inch plate—sans salt, sans pepper, sans everything. I declare, on the honor of a soldier, that I never before saw a boiled potato look so utterly lonesome. I think that I made a remark to that effect at the time, for the darkey seemed amused, and when I told him to keep his black hand out of my new tin plate he opened his mouth to such an extent that his ears were in eclipse.

My breakfast disposed of, I went on deck and deposited myself in a huge coil of six-inch hawser on the after part of the quarter-deck, where for hours—and alone—I watched the mighty combers which, as yet, had not tumbled aboard to any great damage. Suddenly the door of the after house flew open, and out shot my captain. Righting himself, he said, "Sergeant, you must not sit there, it is dangerous. The field gun lashed to the rail near where you are sitting was washed overboard last night." I thanked him for his kind warning, adding that I was not a loaded field piece, and I didn't purpose to go off after that fashion. Meanwhile, I was watching a tremendous comber making toward the starboard quarter. Pointing in that direction, I said, "Captain, that fellow means mischief, and you had better seek shelter." He took the hint. As the lawless comber with a thundering roar broke over the deck, I instinctively seized the topmost flakes of the coil with both hands. After the tons of the North Atlantic had left the deck and gone back to its own, I found myself jammed into that coil doubled up like a jack-knife with feet and hands sticking through different parts of the mass of nearly wrecked cordage. I knew something had happened, but which was Hawes and which was hawser I was too badly twisted and tangled to determine. "What would my mother think of me now?" I soliloquized. By dint of vigorous kicking,

wriggling, clawing, and sundry other manoeuvres I shuffled that hempen coil, and finding that I was not *Haves de combat*, nor my zeal dampened (but with some loss of dignity as a soldier), I went in search of less tight-fitting and clinging garments. Of the 1,500 soldiers aboard, not a soul of them knew anything of the circus I had had.

The next morning came in with a cloudless sky, the ship on an even keel, on a glassy sea. As I went forward I looked over the rail and noticed that the water had a peculiar color. To Sergeant Simmons, who was to be my guest at the galley, I said: "We are in shoal water," and looking ahead, added, "and we are shoaling fast. We shall be aground in less than five minutes. However, let us make sure of our potatoes." As we went below I heard the gong sound in the engine room, and at that instant the ship came to a full stop, but without a perceptible jar, on Frying-Pan Shoals—and within the five minutes specified. Adequately to describe our experience during the eleven hours we were stranded on the worst coast of the United States would take more time than this occasion affords or your patience would allow. I have been on the rocks off an inhospitable coast of South America, and on a lee shore elsewhere, but perhaps this was the most trying situation of all, because in this case infinitely more was involved. Although the situation seemed desperate I never lost courage for a moment. From my diary I have written out somewhat in detail an account of our experience on Frying-Pan Shoals; but to-night I can give you only a glimpse of what stared us in the face on that twenty-eighth day of February, 1862.

Of course I had but a superficial knowledge of our surroundings, but the school had been opened and I was in the mood to put myself in training. To my amazement I found that the port anchor had been let go, notwithstanding the fact that that end of the ship was already stuck fast in the mud. As General Butler came on deck he asked the captain, "What's that?" pointing to the flag, Union down, in the port fore rigging. "Flag of distress," said the skipper. "Can you display it nowhere else?" asked the general. "Yes, at the mizzen peak," re-

plied the skipper. "Half-mast it at the mizzen peak, Union up, forever!" roared the general. Then a signal gun was fired, but this was immediately muzzled, for Fort Macon and horsemen were in plain sight from our deck. All the troops were immediately ordered to go below. I recognized the wisdom of the order, but I concluded that it didn't include me. So I ranged alongside the ship's quartermaster, who at once adopted me as his assistant; and it proved to be the longest watch on deck that I ever experienced,—from 8 o'clock A. M., till about 8 o'clock P. M.

It was soon discovered that the good ship had resented the indignity of dropping the anchor under her forefoot by rolling over onto it and forcing a fluke through her iron bow. At this hour we had only fourteen feet of water forward, while the ship drew about eighteen feet, and the tide was falling. But as the water fell outside it continued to rise in the forward compartment, till the Thirty-first Massachusetts boys had the choice of being drowned in an iron kettle or vacating their quarters. No deaths by drowning were reported.

Doubtless General Butler comprehended the gravity of the situation, but he was outwardly cool and collected during the entire day, and actively in command.

To arouse the ship from her siesta various expedients were resorted to. Orders were issued to jettison some of the heavier cargo. Among the first things I noticed going overboard were mosquito netting and camp and garrison equipage. In this connection the acting quartermaster of the expedition cut a sorry figure. Seated on the "booby hatch," with his mouth full of oaths, flourishing a revolver and threatening to shoot, this officer was supposed to be executing orders. While I had no connection with his squad I was a witness of what was being done on that part of the ship. Finally a barrel got jammed in the hatch. The air was blue with oaths, and I noticed some of the men edging away from the flourishing pistol. I could stand the pressure no longer. Seizing a capstan bar I stepped to the hatch and said, "Lower a bit," then, canting the barrel, said, "Hoist," and the situation was relieved. To the disgust of the

officer some one cried, "Bully for the sergeant." Spluttering oaths the officer turned on me, and, pointing his pistol threateningly, demanded if I belonged to that squad. I looked him square in the face for a moment, and then said, perhaps with more emphasis than my rank would fairly warrant, "No, sir," then pointing to his pistol, added, "but that is no good." To his credit be it said the pistol-bearer quieted down, and the pistol was not in evidence during the rest of the day. As I turned away my colonel laid his hand on my shoulder, saying, "Sergeant, I'm glad to see you here. That's a miserable fellow." I know I was terribly angry at the wretch; but the kind words of my colonel relieved the tension.

After some hours a steamer was made out coming up the coast. Her progress was closely watched. The stars and stripes floated from her peak, but she might be a rebel gun-boat for all that. As she rounded to at a distance and headed for us a boat was called away with an officer in charge to ascertain the nationality of the ship. She proved to be the United States gun-boat Mount Vernon, on blockade duty off Cape Fear river. She had fortunately seen the flash of our gun, but was too far off to hear the report, and immediately started to investigate. Imagination alone can picture forth our feelings of relief at having a United States gun-boat between us and the rebel fort at the mouth of Cape Fear river—not to mention the rising wind and muttering sea, which would soon reduce the good ship Mississippi to a scrap heap unless relieved at flood tide. Captain Glisson of the Mt. Vernon shook his head as hawser after hawser parted in his efforts to pull us off. "You have, perhaps, one chance in a million," said the captain, "to float your ship." To save his own ship he was obliged to haul off to deeper water, for he had touched bottom several times. Meanwhile our engine was working full steam ahead. The quartermaster and I were forward charged with heaving the lead. As a precaution troops were being transferred to the Mt. Vernon, for there was slight expectation of saving our ship. Just here the quartermaster said, "Sergeant, I've got to go aft; look out for falling spars as the ship rolls." When he returned, he said the Maine troops

were being sent to the gun-boat, but he had obtained my colonel's consent, and would I remain and take the one chance,—“We need you—for, if we don't get off this tide, good-by Mississippi.” I simply said “I'll stick.” A little later he said, “I wish you would take the lead again, you have a more sensitive touch.” My heart gave a big thump as I felt the lead trail aft just a bit. As with tense nerves I watched the lead-line, the General, apparently thinking I had fallen asleep, or was idling, yelled, “Keep that lead a-going.” Turning to the quartermaster, I said, with as steady voice as I could command, “She forges ahead, sir.” “Are you sure?” he asked. “Sure,” I replied. Then he repeated my report to the quarter-deck, which report brought cheers from every mouth and tears from many eyes. The boats were recalled, and, on account of the heavy sea, were with great difficulty hoisted aboard.

A few hours later, piloted by the *Mt. Vernon*, we let go our anchor near the mouth of the Cape Fear river.

The next morning we took a sailing-master from the *Mt. Vernon* and laid our course for Port Royal (Hilton Head), where we arrived March 2 with our forward compartment full of water, and the ship badly “by the head.” The next day we hauled around to Seabrook Landing, about eight miles from Hilton Head, and disembarked. The first night we were quartered in a cotton shed, pole floor, and it is my belief that we suffered more from cold than we ever did in Augusta, and the poles were the knottiest and crookedest that ever grew upright. Our flesh was torn as well as our clothes. A wag had “For rent” pinned to the tail of his coat. I didn't need a placard, but rather needle and thread and court-plaster.

Our battalion was moved out about half a mile from the landing on the road to Hilton Head, to serve as picket guard. We pitched our tents in a cotton field; and here I had my first experience as a Southern field-hand, from which duty I was detailed to serve as sergeant of the guard. Soon the rumor spread through the camp that the rebels were in force between our position and the Savannah river, and I detected a nervousness on the part of some of the guard. Early in the afternoon the officer

of the day said he was sick, and, as all the other officers were on duty at the landing, he would turn over the command of the guard to me. (A year later he acknowledged that he was scared, not sick.)

As the officer of the day disappeared a staff officer dashed into our camp and inquired for Sergeant Hawes. Presenting myself, the officer said, "The general's compliments, and he orders that you report forthwith at headquarters as a witness before a court of inquiry." It would seem that my first sighting the breakers before spoken of, and also my observing and remarking on the shoaling of the water on Frying-Pan Shoals, had been reported to the general. Hence my summons. There was no cross-examination in my case; and when the president said, "Thank you, sergeant, that's all," I felt relieved; for I could never tell a story twice alike. As I left the court I met the ship's quartermaster, who asked me, "How near to the breakers were we on the night of the gale? I have just testified that we were within one ship's length." "In my judgment," I said, "we were within two ship's length, and I so stated to the court."

Soon after returning to my post I saw the head of a column of troops debouching from the woods about a mile to the front of our position. I had not been notified of any contemplated movement of troops, but I soon satisfied myself that in the "go-as-you-please" gait of the advancing troops there was union of action. The guard took arms. As the head of the column approached the sentinel challenged. Strange to say the challenge was ignored by the colonel. Whereupon I immediately threw my guard across his front and every musket was brought to a ready. By this time the colonel apparently had a suspicion that I knew my duty, if for the moment he had forgotten his, for he halted his regiment, and then advanced and gave the counter-sign, apologized for his seeming discourtesy, and asked me to pass his stragglers, who would come later. Suffice it to say, that when this episode was reported at headquarters the sergeant did not receive a reprimand for any dereliction of duty.

Our picket line extended into a dense oak wood, and as I made the "rounds" at night I frequently heard the sharp click of

the musket as it was brought to a full cock, the sentinei being too scared to challenge, and I was obliged to announce my approach to the challenge of the click.

One of the scared sentinels said afterwards that he guessed I was the only one that night in danger of being shot.

On the ninth of March (a notable day in my calendar) we struck tents and embarked on the steamship Matanzas, the general deeming it wise to transfer the Thirty-first regiment to our quarters on the Mississippi lest the hastily patched bow should break adrift and endanger the lives of those in the forward compartment. Our seven days' run ashore was a blessing somewhat disguised.

The next morning we hauled around to Hilton Head and anchored to await the Mississippi, which had experienced additional trouble. At high noon on the thirteenth both ships "beat to quarters," and we resumed our voyage.

On the seventh day from Hilton Head, after suffering the tortures of the damned from both hunger and thirst (from the details of which, good Lord deliver us), a gun-boat hove to across our bow, and ascertaining that ours was a troop ship bound for Ship Island, informed us that we were within five hours' sail of our long-sought-for port.

Every soldier gave voice to his feelings, and then "piped down" to pack knapsacks. We forgot that our throats were parched and that our stomachs were in a collapsed condition. (Blessing on the man who invented forgetfulness.)

Four hundred pairs of eyes were shortly on the lookout for Ship Island. By and by masts appeared, and then the hulls came into view, but not the slightest indication of land. Vessels only—apparently in mid-ocean. To see vessels rising apparently out of the water was a novel sight to some of the boys. But when they discovered the low-lying island almost under our jib-boom their astonishment was complete. At 3 o'clock P. M., March 20, we dropped anchor within a cable's length of the Mississippi, which had arrived a day or two in advance of us. Our comrades who had sailed from New York had arrived while we were stranded at Hilton Head, and as we came to anchor gave us

hearty cheers from the shore, and we returned the greeting with interest, but we had no further communication with them for three days. We had another practical illustration of the fact that doubtful things are very uncertain. A northerly gale kicked up such an ugly surf that we couldn't land till late in the afternoon of the twenty-second, when we literally staggered ashore. An officer of a Maine battery captured me and took me to his quarters and gave me a square meal and a good bed, and for twelve solid hours I forgot that I was a soldier. After an 8 o'clock substantial breakfast I reported for duty with my company; and on the whole I was glad that I was alive.

Before I left the ship the captain said to me that he never before saw so fine a body of men. "Why," said he, "they have a right to mutiny. I would consider it a religious duty to lead a mutiny on far less provocation than they have. They have been in a starving condition for days, and yet not one breach of discipline has come to my knowledge."

Ship Island—chiefly barren sand—is about six miles long, and perhaps half a mile wide at its widest part, and rises only a few feet above the sea. The troops were encamped at the western end of the island. The extreme eastern end is somewhat more elevated, and at the time of our arrival a growth of pines served for both fuel and timber. During heavy gales the larger part of the island was actually under water. On this nearly submerged sand bank the Thirteenth Maine drew for consolation for more than three months. But there was no lack of employment. To our military duties was added excessive fatigue duty day and night, for all transports discharged their cargo at this rendezvous.

(To be continued.)

CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1793**By Frank Mortimer Hawes**

(Continued.)

Since our reference to Samuel Holbrook, schoolmaster of Charlestown (Vol. III., p. 68) an interesting article has appeared in the New England Genealogical Register, Vol. 58, p. 308, which informs us that he was born in Boston, 1729, the son of Abiah and Mary (Needham) Holbrook. His eldest brother, Abiah, Jr., was a distinguished schoolmaster of Boston, from 1741 to his death in 1768 or 1769. Samuel began to teach in 1745 as his brother's assistant, and in 1750 was receiving a salary of £50 as usher of the South Writing School. In 1769 he succeeded his brother as master of this school, at a salary of £100. In 1770 one Thomas Parker complained that Master Holbrook had given his son an unreasonable correction, but apparently no action was taken. In 1776 Mr. Holbrook received an extra £80 on account of the high cost of living, and in 1777 he was allowed £100 for the same reason. He seems to have continued his work in Boston until 1782.

The Memorial History of Boston says: "Samuel Holbrook, the schoolmaster, was Town Clerk of Charlestown, 1783." There must be some mistake in the date of his death, July 24, 1784, as the Charlestown records speak of him as late as March 5, 1787, when he was still living. His successor, Samuel Payson, was at the head of the town school in 1788. June 1 and November 12 of that year he received his quarter's salary, in the last instance £27 15s 0d. December 7, 1792, "The committee appointed upon memorial of Mr. Payson, the schoolmaster, have attended and find Mr. Payson has lost £50 in consequence of being obliged to sell his warrants for less than their nominal value in order to subsist himself and family. They report it is just and proper that the town make good the deficiency." Mr. Payson probably continued to serve as town clerk until his resignation from the school, some time in 1800. Samuel Payson, perhaps a graduate of Harvard College, class of 1782, according to Wyman, was in the census of 1789, and came from Chelsea in 1787. He married Grace Webb in 1790, and together they reared a

family of children. He became cashier of the Massachusetts Bank, and a trustee of the Charlestown schools in 1802.

During a part of this period George Bartlett appears to have been master of the writing school. Voted, December 6, 1790, that George Bartlett have an order on the treasurer for his bill for ink for the school, 12s 11d. Mr. Bartlett was born October 5, 1760, and was a brother of Hon. Josiah Bartlett, already mentioned. He married Mary Gorham, and one of their family of eight children, Catharine, became the wife of Rev. James Walker, president of Harvard College (Wyman). From 1812 to 1816, inclusive, Mr. Bartlett served on the board of trustees.

December 3, 1792, voted that Mary Rand have an order on the treasurer for her bill for schooling poor children, £1 5s 0d. This item preserves the name of one of the female teachers of that period.

We are now arrived at a time when Charlestown school affairs are to take on a more modern aspect. In accounting for the change, which was a gradual one, we can do no better than to glean from the records. The immediate cause, it would seem, was a financial one.

May 20, 1790. "An examination of the poors' bonds and of the school bonds showed there was a deficiency; to make good the principal in the Bonds belonging to the Schools would require £488 18s 8d, and it was voted that this be made good so that the will of donors may be complied with." Messrs. James Russell, Richard Devens, and Thomas Harris "proposed that a farm in Stoneham, improved by Silas Simonds, and belonging to the town, be appraised and, so far as the sum will go, be taken in part for this deficiency, and that the remainder be taken in real estate or bonds, so that the funds may be kept good."

October 4, 1790, a committee of three, James Russell, Samuel Dexter, and Isaac Mallett, was given "full power to make transfer of the town's farm at Stoneham, so that the fee may rest in the school forever, as they may see fit."

April 4, 1791, "Voted to appoint a committee of seven to consider what further provision is best to be made for the public school and report at the May meeting. The gentlemen appointed were Richard Devens, Esq., Samuel Dexter, Esq., Cap-

tain Thomas Harris, John Larkin, Timothy Thompson, Jr., John Bromfield, and Philemon Russell. They beg leave to report it is their opinion that females be admitted into the public school within the Neck for six months of the year, from May to October, inclusive; that their hours of instruction be from 11 to 1 and 4 to 6, from the age of seven or more. That until nine years they be taught reading and spelling. That after that age they be also taught writing and arithmetic, and that reading from that time be considered as including propriety as to cadence, accent, emphasis, and pauses, and that a sum not exceeding £50 be granted to provide an usher for the six months aforesaid, of which the other schools are to take their due proportion. That a committee of five be appointed to obtain some suitable person for that purpose, and that in order to promote the best interest of the school and excite a laudable ambition in the scholars, the same committee shall for the year ensuing as often at least as once every quarter visit the school to enquire into the proficiency of the scholars, the instruction and discipline of the school, and to advise with the master respecting the same, and that a committee for similar purposes be annually chosen." Voted that the selectmen be the committee to regulate the schools and provide an usher for the school within the Neck for six months. Later it was voted to add Richard Devens, Samuel Dexter, Philemon Russell, and Seth Wyman to this committee.

May 23, 1791, "Voted that Captain Goodwin alter the schoolhouse to accommodate it for an assistant master." The last named committee was re-appointed in May, 1792.

Evidently there was some doubt as to what constituted the school fund. Some claimed that the Common was the property of the school, and proposed as an investment that a house and barn be built thereon to rent as a tavern. A discussion naturally followed, and a committee was appointed to look into the legality of the matter. Later in the year, in a warrant for a town meeting, we read: "To know whether the town will take some measures to place all funds belonging to the schools upon a more advantageous footing than they now are." This is the vote recorded: "That Hon. James Russell, Richard Devens, Esq., and Aaron Putnam, Esq., be a committee on school funds, and

to report at an adjourned meeting the amount of said funds and the best means of placing them at interest, and what the probable income from them will be."

In December this committee reported the school fund to be as follows:—

| | |
|--|-----------|
| Farm in Stoneham, prized at | £450. |
| Bonds due from Richard Miller, Jonathan Chapman, and Richard Chapman | £70. 0.4 |
| Captain Nathan Adams, William Grubb, and Richard Trumbull | £24. 0.2 |
| Captain Benjamin Frothingham | £20. 0.6 |
| Lot of land sold to Timothy Wright | £119. 0.8 |
| Received of Samuel Swan, Esq., for a lot of land be- longing to James Kenney, secured by money borrowed of the school fund | £49.12.0 |
| Farm at Stoneham, deficient | £38.18.8 |
| A certain pasture in Medford | £90. 0.0 |
| Total | £861.12.1 |

To this may be added the commons which it is proposed to rent; notes due from Nicholas Hopping, £51 16s 3d, and from Benjamin Sweetser, £26 0s 0d, but from these nothing is expected. The committee is of the opinion that the income from the funds will amount to £70 per annum. They recommend that a committee be appointed to care for this fund. It was voted to accept this report, "and that the same committee be empowered."

In examining the records the writer must have overlooked the following item, which appears in the Charlestown school report for 1873, where a history of the school fund is given: "March, 1793, voted to sell the common, and that the proceeds be vested in funds for the use of the school."

March 4, 1793, at the town meeting, which adjourned to 3 o'clock in the afternoon, it was moved and carried, that seven trustees be chosen to superintend the schools and the school fund. To the more conservative, and especially to the board of selectmen, this measure may have seemed reactionary in the extreme. For one hundred and sixty years control of all school

matters had been vested in that body. But this was the year of the French Revolution!

The same day it was voted that a committee of three be appointed to apply to the general court to have trustees incorporated to superintend the school and the school funds, who shall be chosen annually. The legislature passed the act March 27, 1793, and Richard Devens, Nathaniel Gorham, Josiah Bartlett, Aaron Putnam, Joseph Hurd, Nathaniel Hawkins, and Seth Wyman constituted the first board of trustees of the Charlestown free schools.

April 18, 1793. The town treasurer was empowered to deliver to Aaron Putnam, Esq., treasurer for the trustees, all the moneys, bonds, notes of hand, etc., being the property of the free schools of Charlestown, that now are or may come into his, the treasurer's, hands.

From this time all proceedings of the Charlestown School Board, up to 1814, were recorded by the secretary in a book, known as Volume I. Unfortunately, this valuable record is supposed to be lost, certainly it cannot now be consulted. The selectmen's books furnish us with the annual amounts appropriated for schools, the names of the trustees as they were elected, and a few other items.

Voted May 6, 1793, to raise £175 for the schools, in addition to the school funds.

May 12, 1794. The proceedings of the trustees of the schools, with a state of their funds, were read in town meeting. This may be called the first Charlestown school report. The same day it was voted to raise £200 for the schools.

May 6, 1795. The second annual report was presented, and the sum of £350 was appropriated for the schools. But what is of more interest to us, it was also "voted to build a schoolhouse in Milk Row," and £100 was appropriated, and if there is any surplus "it is to be disposed of by the trustees at their discretion." The sum named must be construed as generous in the extreme; but the simplicity of the last clause is almost touching. The good fathers of the town were to learn that appropriations for schoolhouses never come out with a surplus. We hear no more of this project until the meeting of May 14,

1798, three years later, when it is voted that the trustees exhibit their account for building the schoolhouse in Milk Row to the selectmen, and if they think it right, that they direct the treasurer to pay them what they have expended more than the original grant for that purpose, and direct the assessors to tax the same.

August 6, '98, voted to approve of Mr. Samuel Tufts' bill for building the schoolhouse in Milk Row, and that the assessors be directed to tax the balance, being \$241.49, agreeably to a vote of the town in May last. This would make the whole cost of this school not far from \$750, or half as much again as the original estimate.

May 1, 1797. After the proceedings of the trustees and their accounts were read and approved by the citizens at town meeting assembled, it was voted to raise \$1,166 for the schools. Thus the old order of things was passing, and we are to hear of pounds, shillings, and pence no more. This was the annual appropriation (or more exactly, \$1,166.66) until 1801. The amount gradually increased until May, 1806, when it reached the sum of \$3,000. It fell off again in 1808 to \$2,000, but by May 14, 1812, again stood at \$3,000. May 3, 1813, the sum voted for school purposes was \$3,500.

The death of George Washington occurred December 14, 1799. The town records of Charlestown take notice of the event December 26. It was then voted to hold a commemorative service, Tuesday, the thirty-first. As the school children took part on that sad occasion, it seems fitting to include an account of the day in these annals.

A detachment of artillery "near the monument" fired minute guns until the procession entered the meeting house, where the exercises were held at one o'clock. Order of the procession:—

The marshal.

The male children, from seven to fourteen years of age.

The public schoolmasters.

The young men from fourteen to twenty-five.

Three military companies.

Military officers.

Citizens.

King Solomon's Lodge of Masons.

The assessors, parish treasurer, and clerk.

Trustees of the free schools.

The ministers and deacons.

Town treasurer and town clerk.

Magistrates and representatives.

The selectmen.

Band of music.

Marshal.

The programme consisted of "a dirge on the organ, prayer, a funeral hymn, discourse, funeral ode, the Valedictory of George Washington, Occasional dirge, blessing."

The entire exercises seem to have been conducted by Rev. Jedediah Morse, D. D., who preached from the text: "So Moses, the servant of the Lord, died. His eye was not dim, nor his natural force abated. And the children of Israel wept for Moses in the Plains of Moab thirty days."

March 3, 1800, it was voted that the representative be directed to petition the general court that the Act incorporating the free schools be so far allowed that three of said body shall be a quorum to transact business. At the May meeting it was voted that four trustees be chosen within and three without the Neck. Thereafter this seems to have been the established rule.

In August of this year it is "voted to build a schoolhouse of brick on or near the spot in which the schoolhouse within the Neck now stands, for the accommodation of schools, town meetings, and other public business, and that all the other school buildings be put in repair." The committee to procure estimates were Lemuel Cox, George Bartlett, Matthew Bridge, Oliver Holden, Thomas Harris. The town proposes "to pay one-third the cost at commencement of the work, one-third when completed, and another third at a distinct period to be agreed upon." Later the trustees are empowered to dispose of the old school building to the best advantage.

May 10, 1802. Voted \$100, to repair the schoolhouse near Alcwife bridge, and voted the thanks of the town be extended to Mr. Zabdiel B. Adams for the present of a lot of land at the Neck for to erect a town school upon; and to thank Mr. Daniel

Raymond for his present of an ornamental image in the new brick schoolhouse.

We may conclude that the school at Alewife bridge was considerably damaged, probably by fire, for the trustees are given the discretion to repair or to build anew. May 3, 1803, it appears that "the expense of building the new schoolhouse in Ward 3 near Alewife bridge, in addition to \$100 voted last year, was \$400."

July 15, 1805. Voted to dig a well at east end of the brick schoolhouse, to contain two pumps. There were two other wells in town (for fire purposes) at this time.

July 3, 1812. Voted that the trustees have printed and handed to the citizens by the constables for the May meeting an annual statement of their funds, and a correct amount of moneys expended, in future. This was not an innovation, for there are in existence printed reports signed May, 1801, and May, 1802. The next that has come down to us is for 1813.

From the Report of 1801:—

Mr. Payson had unexpectedly resigned, and a Mr. Tillotson was engaged on trial. Unfortunately he fell ill, and the school was supplied by Messrs. Sewall and Rockwood, and afterwards for about the same time, six or seven weeks, by James Pike. Finally Mr. Ashur Adams was engaged. Mr. Blood was in charge of the reading school for young misses, and also gave instruction in English grammar, geography, and the Latin and Greek languages. The trustees flatter themselves that these gentlemen will give reasonable satisfaction to the town. Amount of money received, including \$1,000 towards building the new schoolhouse and town hall, \$4,124.81. Paid out, \$3,035.10; leaving a balance of \$1,089.71, "and the trustees are proud to say they owe not a single dollar, to their knowledge." The number of scholars, between the ages of seven and fourteen (both sexes), exclusive of those without the Neck, is 317. Of these, sixty-six live above the house of Captain Richard Frothingham. The trustees recommend building a school at the Neck for them. This will require another master. The sum appropriated for the last five years past, where there has been only one

master within the Neck, has been \$1,666.66. The estimate for the coming year is as follows:—

| | |
|--|------------|
| For two masters, within the Neck | \$1,091.67 |
| Wood | 50.00 |
| For poor children, education and books | 125.00 |
| Rent for room, stove, etc. | 100.00 |
| For school No. 2, without the Neck | 287.00 |
| No. 3, " " " | 145.00 |
| No. 4, " " " | 145.00 |
| | <hr/> |
| | \$1,943.67 |
| Deducting income of school fund | 437.85 |
| | <hr/> |

Leaves to be provided for \$1,505.82

Signed by Benjamin Hurd, Jr., Secretary.

On hearing this report the town generously "voted \$1,650 for schools, not including cost of new schoolhouse."

From the Report of 1802:—

There will be required \$1,650, in addition to the income from the fund for the following purposes: To support the three schools without the Neck, to maintain two masters "the year round" within the peninsula; \$150 will be needed for supporting a school on or in the neighborhood of the Neck, and \$100 for the children of the poor. The trustees propose that all schools taught by the women, as well as the others, be free schools and supported at the expense of the town; also, that they be under the superintendence of the trustees. This undertaking will add four or five schools for little children to be taught by women, at an additional expense to the town of \$1,000. The lot of land given by Mr. Adams is in a very commodious situation near the Neck, and there are enough scholars in that section to constitute a school, and enough below to fill the two public schools by the meeting-house. The trustees recommend building on this lot at the Neck, as a gentleman offers to loan for two years a sum sufficient to erect a schoolhouse.

Signed May 10, 1802, by Benjamin Hurd, Jr., Secretary.

[To be Continued.]

NEIGHBORHOOD SKETCH NUMBER 8 WASHINGTON AND PROSPECT STREETS

By Joseph H. Clark

I lived at the corner of what is now called Washington and Prospect streets (then Charlestown) about the year 1838-40, with my parents, Jonathan C. and Irene G. Clark.

Father kept a grocery store in the same building that now stands there, and there was at that time but one other grocery in town—that was Johnny Ireland's at the corner of School street and Somerville avenue, now called, whose principal trade was retailing New England rum, which was a common custom in those days with grocerymen.

I attended school at the building or schoolhouse on Medford street (Mrs. Whittredge, teacher), and I think there were but two other schoolhouses in town at that time. I attended church and Sunday school in the hall of the old Engine house, situated corner of Washington and Prospects streets, opposite my house, where I think the first Unitarian society first worshipped. Next to me, easterly, was the residence of Mr. Clark Bennett, who at that time was prominent in "town matters"; beyond me, next easterly, was what was called the "Yellow Block," in which resided Nathan Fellows, who sold fish out of a wagon; next easterly was Ives Hill; next, James Underwood.

Opposite my house, on Washington street, resided Joseph Clark (no relation of mine); next westerly, William Bonner (on the site of Prospect-hill schoolhouse), next westerly, Miss Eliza Bonner, afterward Mrs. Augustus Hitchings; next westerly, David Sanborn.

Adjoining my estate were the residences of Benjamin F. Ricker and John (B.) Giles, on Somerville avenue.

All of my neighbors that I have mentioned lived to a good old age, and have long since departed and joined the silent majority.

At the time I refer to there was no public conveyance to Boston—Somerville avenue was not completed from Prospect to Medford streets. Farming, brickmaking, and milk were the principal occupations of the townspeople.

Somerville, April 26, 1900.

Officers of Somerville Historical Society

1905-1906

| | |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------|
| President | Frank M. Hawes |
| First Vice-President | Levi L. Hawes |
| Second Vice-President | James F. Whitney |
| Third Vice-President | John F. Ayer |
| Treasurer | Seth Mason |
| Recording Secretary | Mrs. William B. Holmes |
| Corresponding Secretary | Florence E. Carr |
| Librarian and Curator | Alfred M. Cutler |

Council-at-Large

| | | |
|-------------------|---------------|--------------------|
| Charles D. Elliot | Anna P. Vinal | L. Roger Wentworth |
|-------------------|---------------|--------------------|

Committee on Historic Sites

| | | |
|------------------------|-------------------|---------------|
| J. O. Hayden, Chairman | Charles D. Elliot | Edward Glines |
|------------------------|-------------------|---------------|

Essays and Addresses

| | |
|------------------------|-------------------|
| John F. Ayer, Chairman | Charles D. Elliot |
| W. E. Brigham | Seth Mason |
| Mrs. J. F. Ayer | |

Library and Cabinet

| | | |
|----------------------------|-------------|------------------|
| Alfred M. Cutler, Chairman | Edith Hayes | Mrs. Helen Heald |
|----------------------------|-------------|------------------|

Photographs

| | |
|-------------------------------|------------------|
| Benjamin F. Freeman, Chairman | James F. Whitney |
| Albert L. Haskell | |

Press and Clippings

| | |
|----------------------------|---------------|
| W. P. Jones, Chairman | Anna P. Vinal |
| Mrs. Emrna Prichard Hadley | Lucy M. Stone |

Committee on Publications

| | |
|---------------------------|----------------|
| Sam Walter Foss, Chairman | Frank M. Hawes |
| Sara A. Stone | Samuel Earle |

Military Records

| | | |
|---------------------------|------------------|---------------|
| J. H. Dusseault, Chairman | Alfred M. Cutler | Mary A. Haley |
|---------------------------|------------------|---------------|

House

| | |
|---------------------------|--------------------|
| Mrs. Isaac Rich, Chairman | Mrs. E. F. Hammond |
| Mrs. F. DeWitt Lapham | |

Hospitality

| | |
|----------------------------------|----------------------|
| Mrs. William B. Holmes, Chairman | Mrs. L. B. Pillsbury |
| Mrs. Mae D. Frazar | |

7 113 85

Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

October, 1905

Vol. IV

No. 3

CONTENTS.

| | PAGE |
|---|------|
| PERSONAL EXPERIENCE OF A UNION VETERAN <i>Levi Lindley Hawes</i> | 49 |
| CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1812 <i>Frank Mortimer Hawes</i> | 63 |
| CONSTITUTION OF THE SOMERVILLE UNION BENEVOLENT SEWING SOCIETY | 74 |

HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee

PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL EARLE

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. IV.

OCTOBER, 1905

No. 3

PERSONAL EXPERIENCE OF A UNION VETERAN

By Levi Lindley Hawes

(Continued.)

About the middle of April General Butler learned that Farragut's fleet had crossed the bar and was ready to proceed up the Mississippi. Six regiments and two batteries were immediately embarked on sailing transports and started for the front. On the eighteenth—although about sixty miles away—we heard the gentle voice of Porter's fifteen-inch mortars. Then came the cheering account of Farragut's passing the forts—Jackson and St. Philip—and later the landing of General Butler in New Orleans on the first of May. Other troops were sent forward as transportation could be furnished, till early in May the Thirteenth Maine only was left on the island.

"Many are called, but few are chosen," was my comment at the time; and we were the chosen few. Some of the boys regarded this as punishment, but punishment for what? No adequate answer was forthcoming. We had been inspected by General Butler himself, and very recently by a regular army officer, who pronounced the Thirteenth Maine second to no regiment in the department. Until the forts below New Orleans were captured, Ship Island was the only approach to the city held by Union troops, and it was of the last importance that it should be garrisoned by reliable troops.

Of course we exercised a soldier's prerogative, and grumbled and chafed at our seemingly inglorious assignment; and yet we were performing a most important military duty.

As a relief from the monotony of our service here, we occa-

sionally sent expeditions to the Mississippi shore to afford protection to known Union men against bushwhackers, and to show the rebels generally that we were ever on the alert. As a matter of fact, we had reason to believe that we were liable to receive a visit from the rebels at any hour, day or night. July 8 brought the pay-master, and orders. One company was ordered to Fort Pike, on the Rigolets, and one to Fort Macomb, on Pass Chef Menteur, these being the entrances to Lake Pontchartrain. Three companies were ordered to Fort Jackson, and one to Quarantine Station, about five miles above the fort. A few days later two companies were ordered to Fort St. Philip, leaving two companies, and regimental headquarters, on Ship Island.

These several transfers, you will notice, carried the entire regiment to guard all the water approaches to New Orleans, save the river above the city, and *Farragut the Superb* was competent to attend to that approach.

According to the repeated statements of the commanding general, "the Thirteenth Maine regiment held the *posts of honor* in the Department of the Gulf."

On the twenty-eighth of April Colonel Dow was promoted to brigadier-general, and Lieutenant-Colonel Rust succeeded to the command of the regiment. Shortly after our arrival on Ship Island, I was detailed in the adjutant's office. Adjutant Speed was promoted to captain and assigned to General Dow's staff as acting assistant adjutant-general. Sergeant-Major Wilson was promoted to adjutant, and I was "warranted" to rattle around in the office vacated by him. And I found it no sinecure, for during the absence of the adjutant on several occasions, the entire duties of the office devolved on me.

When the three companies were transferred to Fort Jackson, I was detailed as acting adjutant of the post. Later I served in the same capacity at Fort St. Philip and in New Orleans.

The post—Forts Jackson and St. Philip—was commanded, for a short time, by Brigadier-General Neal Dow. Here altogether new responsibilities were thrust upon us. Vessels, and crafts of every description, passing up and down the river, were required by department orders to "heave to" and obtain the per-

mission of the boarding officer before they could proceed to New Orleans or to sea.

The many bayous leading to the rear of Fort Jackson were always a source of anxiety, for this whole section seemed to be cursed by or with guerrillas; and it was our fortune to capture and disperse several gangs of these wretches.

Within a few weeks after our arrival, the Hartford and Brooklyn dropped anchor off the forts. It was Admiral Farragut's first and only visit after the capture, and as he remained over night, the garrisons proceeded to burn powder and send up rockets in his honor, and in various other ways demonstrated to the illustrious hero that his name and record were as dear to us as they were to the blue-jackets, and I may add that his visit was a God-send to us. At 9 o'clock the next morning the Hartford and Brooklyn went to sea. The echo of our guns fired in salute had hardly died away, when the signal gun brought every soldier to the parapet. Then a solid shot went whistling across the river, and then another. Every gun in both forts was trained for business. At this juncture "H. B. M. S. S. Rinaldo" rounded to, and with loud protests and threats (!) her commander demanded of the boarding officer "by what authority he was fired upon." He was courteously informed "by what authority," although he was already informed as regards General Butler's orders in general and particular. The Hartford, flying the admiral's flag, was amenable to this particular order.

Luckily for this irate Englishman, he had level-headed New England men to deal with. Had we observed strictly the letter of our orders, the Rinaldo would have been knocked into kindling wood. The commander was kindly warned in regard to his future behavior while passing this outpost, and I am sure that the boarding officer indulged in no ambiguous language.

At this time the notable General Order No. 28 had been in force about four months, and had become of almost international importance. Rebels and their sympathizers, foreign as well as American, were using their utmost endeavors to bury its author under a world of obloquy. The world now knows that General Order No. 28 was productive of good, and only of good, to *all*

the people within the limits of the Department of the Gulf. No soldier ever misconstrued the significance of the order. I can't believe that any rebel ever did. The order executed itself while General Butler remained in the department. It is my belief that General Butler spoke advisedly when he said "there were more paroled rebel soldiers in New Orleans than there were Union troops within fifty miles of his headquarters," because he had caused a census to be taken, and was thus enabled to *locate* every man and woman in the city.

The Thirteenth Maine was put to a cruel test by being placed, in our already weak physical condition, in the malarial swamps of Southern Louisiana, in mid-summer, and kept there for more than a year. And, alas! too, too many heroic souls sleep beneath the soil that once echoed to the tread of millions of human slaves. But we never forgot that we belonged to the "Lord's Country"—never forgot who we were, and what. Even when, one foggy night, Sentinel Swaney shot the quartermaster's mule because it would not obey his challenge to halt, it was credited to his vigilance. And when a soldier tumbled off the draw-bridge into the moat among the alligators, it furnished amusement for the entire garrison—his little dog barking in unison. A few days later the pet dog was "gathered in" by an alligator.

I apprehend that no troops scanned the orders of their department commander more critically or with more complete satisfaction than did we during all these months when the saintly sinners in New Orleans were devoutly praying for the advent of yellow fever, while we, from the head of the roster to the foot, were *prayerfully working* to render its approach impossible.

In New Orleans General Butler organized a brigade of "contrabands," prisoners, and the odds and ends of every nationality, armed with picks, shovels, hoes, brooms, and mule carts, which, under competent officers, proceeded to remove inches, and in some localities *feet*, of the accumulation of a century of fever-breeding material from almost the entire surface within the limits of the city. I do not know that the natives had a vision of a new heaven, but I am sure that there dawned on their aston-

ished sight a *new earth*, of which, perhaps, they never had even dreamed. The streets and alleys of the city had been the theatre of many an upheaval; but I question if New Orleans, as a whole, ever before, or since, got into *such a scrape*, or had so happy an issue out of a deplorable condition.

Of course the gallant action of our fleet in forcing its way past these forts, and dealing with the rebel crafts above, was a theme on which it was our delight to dwell, and from which we gathered inspiration. The gunboat "Varuna" sunk or disabled six of her antagonists before she received her mortal wound; but the gallant Captain Boggs ran his sinking ship to the bank and tied her to a tree, and saved every soul aboard. The trucks of the bow gun-carriage were under water when the gun fired its last shot. When I climbed to her half-submerged deck a few months afterwards, I instinctively took off my cap in salute of the flag that *once proudly floated* at her peak, but was *not* hauled down in *token of surrender*. But the tangible reminder of all the gallant deeds performed in connection with the capture of the forts rendered our inaction more and more irksome.

Then came the rumor—through rebel sources (sources, by the way, through which we received much information of the doings in Washington)—that General Banks had been ordered to relieve General Butler. On Sunday, December 14, 1862, General Banks and his fleet of transports passed the forts. "Mobile and Texas," so ran the rumor, "are to be annexed at once." We hoped to be included in the annexation business. But the programme was materially modified. About three months later I received a letter from General Dudley's adjutant-general asking me to come to Baton Rouge immediately, for he and other officers had recommended me to Colonel Paine, of the First Louisiana Regiment, who desired an adjutant familiar with the duties of the office. By reason of lack of transportation, a week or two passed before I was able to report; and then I found the army all ready to move out towards Port Hudson. The colonel had been obliged to detail one of his own officers, and it was too late to make any change. I housed my disappointment and resumed my duties at Fort St. Philip.

July 8 Port Hudson was "annexed," in spite of my non-attendance at the ceremonies, and another chunk of conceit was knocked out of me.

Previous to this date, several officers and enlisted men, disgusted at being cooped up in garrison, had sought and obtained promotion and transfer to other regiments.

Let me say here, parenthetically, that at least two brigade commanders—regular army officers—made application to have the Thirteenth Maine Regiment assigned each to his brigade for the Port Hudson campaign.

In August the regiment rallied around the flag in New Orleans, where we performed provost guard duty. This change of station and re-assembling of the regiment afforded some relief, but it was not the sort of relief we most desired. And we soon found that, under the existing administration, General Order No. 28, before spoken of, had become less operative. Officers, and even enlisted men, were subjected to gross insults by the women of the city.

Late one afternoon the orderly at our headquarters hurriedly entered the office, saying, "Adjutant, General Banks is on the sidewalk, and he desires to see you." As I presented myself, the general put his arm through mine and invited me to take a walk with him. His "walk" took us out to Canal street, and up that fashionable thoroughfare for several blocks, the general meanwhile talking in his easy, familiar fashion—I, wondering what in the world was the object of this promenade.

Suddenly the general halted, dropped my arm, and then said: "Adjutant, will you please take the number of this mansion?" As I was riding with some of my officers this afternoon, I was grossly insulted by some women on the balcony of this house. I will teach these women that they can't insult me or my officers with impunity. You will place a guard here and allow any one to go in, but no one is to be allowed to come out." Again taking my arm, the general accompanied me to our headquarters on St. Charles street, talking on subjects entirely disconnected from army affairs. A suitable guard was immediately placed as ordered. In due time a court-martial was convened. A woman

was tried and found guilty of the charge preferred and specification, and sentenced to spend her vacation months on Ship Island. The spirit of General Order No. 28 became operative from that hour. The virtues of "the lightning-rod," as the boys called Order No. 28, were again to be tested.

The fact that our colonel was then on detached service led me to believe that the Thirteenth Maine was destined to remain on duty in New Orleans for an indefinite period. Lieutenant-Colonel Buck (late captain in our regiment), who had been assigned to the Twentieth Regiment Corps d'Afrique, then stationed at Fort Macomb, had, a month or two before, without my knowledge, appointed me captain in his regiment. Having served so long in the Thirteenth Maine, I had become so strongly attached to it that it seemed almost like disloyalty to withdraw from it. But I thought I saw a prospect of getting into more active service; therefore, with some misgiving, I finally accepted the commission and joined my company at Fort Macomb. The post commander (Buck) and all the officers of the four companies stationed here were promoted out of the Thirteenth Maine Regiment. Although we regarded ourselves as "would-be fighters," we yet constituted a happy family.

The Twentieth Regiment Corps d'Afrique—so re-named by General Banks—was organized by General Butler from the First and Second Regiments, Louisiana Native Guards, which left the rebel service and disbanded when the Union troops first occupied the city. This regiment was composed of *free colored* men, men of much intelligence, good soldiers, and keen on the scent after smugglers. Furthermore, the regiment contained many good mechanics. Courts-martial were unknown in my company. During more than two years' service, I had occasion to discipline but one man—this for lying. While I was proud of my command, it was a grievous disappointment to be assigned to garrison duty, of which I had had more than enough. Patrolling the lakes and bayous, day and night, in an open boat, was not ideal yachting. And when I learned that the Thirteenth Maine was booked for the Red River campaign, I concluded that the government didn't need my services, anyway,—surely not at the

front. However, if we were not at the front, we held the rear with a firm grip; and I never heard of more than two cases of even yellow fever getting by us.

After nearly a year of this sort of service (and by a process of *evolution* having become known as the "Ninety-first Regiment, U. S. C. I."), a corps of schoolmasters was sent down to us to ascertain how much or how little we knew about war. There were twelve of us to appear before this "weeding-out committee," as in reality we knew it to be. I catalogued myself as a weed gone to seed. It took a colonel, major, captain, and lieutenant about one hour to find out how much the eleven officers really chose to know. Some of them knew they wished to leave the service—and their wishes found favor at headquarters. I sat in my quarters shivering, although the thermometer registered about 100 in the shade, till the orderly brought the message that the "Board" would like to see me. My temperature suddenly became normal, and I thought that if it took the "Board" sixty minutes to dispose of eleven cases, it could dispose of my case in four minutes; that is to say, I thought I could tell them all I knew in that length of time. But I woefully miscalculated the staying qualities of those four officers. As the clock struck eight, the first question was fired at me. When it struck twelve, the president declared the examination closed. The last half-hour, however, was passed in a delightful talk. Two propositions were made to me. The colonel proposed that I be recommended for promotion and assigned to staff duty. The major—a regular army officer—said he would like to have me transferred to the regular service. I was profoundly grateful for their proposed recommendations, and I frankly told them so. I protested that I was not lacking in ambition; but my ambition was to remain in the volunteer service till the close of the war; that my desire for peace was so intense that I was ready and willing to fight for it. The temptation to yield to their several arguments was great, but I believe that I decided wisely.

Shortly thereafter came orders consolidating the Ninety-first Regiment with the Seventy-fourth Regiment—headquarters at Ship Island. All surplus officers, including all the field officers

of the Ninety-first Regiment, received an honorable discharge. Major Pike, on assuming command at Fort Macomb, told me that the company to which I had been assigned at Ship Island was under orders to proceed to Mobile Bay, where Admiral Farragut was making preparations to attack the forts. "Glory! Hallelujah!" I shouted. The astonished major said, "What! are you *that* anxious to have your head knocked off?" "Oh, no, not that," I answered, "but I have a consuming desire to lead these boys where we can get a wholesome whack at this edge of the diabolical rebellion."

My orders directed me to proceed to Ship Island via New Orleans. On arriving at the latter place, without stopping to even tighten my belt, I hastened to the office of the quartermaster of transportation to secure passage to my post, explaining the urgency of the request. By way of answer, the officer said that "he had sent every sort of craft that could carry a major-general or a bag of oats to Mobile Bay, and he didn't expect any boat would return within a day or two." "But I've *got* to go," I protested. "Have you got a sailboat, yawl, or pirogue, for I am as much of a sailor as a soldier, and I can manage anything that will float?" The quartermaster became interested, thinking, perhaps, that the applicant was a lunatic. Discovering that there was method in my madness, he courteously said, "Captain, call here to-morrow at 10 o'clock, and if a boat comes in I will send you to Ship Island forthwith if I have nothing but a bale of hay for freight." I do not know what else the boat carried, but I have a vivid recollection of the fact that she bore me, freighted with anxiety, hope, and expectation, to my destination, just in season to learn that what should have been my company had already gone to Mobile Bay, and I had been assigned to Company "K," which was composed in part of the "surplus men"—odds and ends—of the "consolidated regiment,"—a company at least one-third larger than any other in the regiment,—and every man at the post, white and black, was an entire stranger to me. I was the victim of a situation and a condition. I might have said *O. K.* at the outlook, but I didn't. I *said nothing*, but went to *work*. After a few days the colonel did me

the honor to call on me and read me a letter from General T. W. Sherman, ordering him to "detail an officer to act as ordnance and artillery officer." "None of my old officers," he said, "have any knowledge of ordnance or heavy artillery. You, I have been informed, are well up in these branches, and I have instructed the adjutant to make out an order detailing you, with your company, for this service." To have him whose fame as a battery commander was a household word throughout the United States (and the so-called "Confederate States of America," as well) for my superior officer caused me to forget my Mobile Bay disappointment. On my first inspection I found two 100-pounder Parrott guns, and five eleven-inch Dahlgren guns, all mounted in sand batteries, and all save the Parrotts practically unserviceable. As for ordnance stores, the post lacked almost everything. I immediately made out a requisition for such stores as I deemed essential, and referred it to the colonel, who said, "The war will be over before your requisition will be filled." "On the contrary," I replied, "it will be filled by return boat, or Sherman will give me a cursing that will be heard in Washington."

The first steamer from New Orleans brought every article for which I had made requisition—not omitting the garrison gin and gin-sling, which were not brought in bottles. "I guess old Tom Sherman knows you," was the colonel's comment as the stores were landed on the wharf. "I apprehend he *will know* me before he is done with me," I replied, "for I have a report on the condition of the batteries which I would like to have you sign and transmit to the general by this boat." The report was forwarded. It came back, with a Shermanese double-shotted letter. In language that didn't look well as written nor sound heavenly when spoken, the general ordered the colonel to send the fool captain where he belonged, and detail the best officer he had, as he was originally ordered to do. The colonel was somewhat scared. I was happy. "Please leave the report with me," I said, "and I will trump the general's trick. Since I have been kicked by a government mule, I don't shy at trifles." The second report proved sufficient to bring the inspector-general of the defences of New Orleans down upon me about five o'clock one

Saturday afternoon. Before going to headquarters, the inspector, Colonel Smith, with whom I was well acquainted, called on me, and in his peculiar way informed me of the object of his visit. "You and I," he began, "are in the same boat. The general alleges that you falsely report that the five Dahlgren gun-carriages are liable to collapse at the first or second discharge of the gun; that the plank gun foundations of the batteries are rotten and unsafe. The general is mad at you, and he is wrathful with me for saying to him that I knew you personally, and that you were not capable of making a false report. My reputation as well as yours is involved. To-morrow morning at nine o'clock we will demonstrate that you know your business." Battery No. 1, near my quarters, was the first one tested that Sunday morning. The gun-carriage collapsed utterly at the first discharge. "I have seen enough," said the inspector; "if you will allow me, I will spend the rest of the morning in your quarters, while you proceed with your work of destruction." At 12 o'clock I reported "*one* gun-carriage demolished at the *first* discharge; *three* carriages at the *second*, and *one* carriage at the *third* discharge." "You have redeemed your promise; and it is the best Sunday job I have ever seen," was the inspector's comment.

In recognition of my Sunday's work of destruction, General Sherman sent to our post the Second Ohio Light Battery. And I served as ordnance officer till the regiment was mustered out of service.

Although my second tour of duty on Ship Island was of rather a sober character, yet we occasionally had somewhat stirring times. Armed boat expeditions along the Mississippi shore, and to some of the islands, served to remind us that even *our* military service was needed still in this waiting-to-be-blest section.

Finally the general before Mobile sent an order for our two 100-pounder Parrott guns. The colonel told the officer who brought the order that the guns were about a mile from the wharf, and that, for lack of facilities, he could neither dismount them nor transport them to the wharf. "*But we must have them.*" The general's orders are imperative," insisted the officer. The colonel sent for me to corroborate his statement.

The two officers chanced to be Americans by brevet, as it were. After some little discussion, I said, "Gentlemen, I am a Yankee, and I beg you will allow me to retire to my quarters and do a bit of thinking." I found my room crowded with officers curious to know what was up. "Gentlemen," I said, "please ask me no question, but leave me alone for ten minutes." My lieutenant sprang to his feet and said, "Boys, get out of here. The captain's got something in his head." Laughing at the lieutenant's drollery, they all retired. In less than ten minutes I had solved the problem—thanks to my habit of *seeing things* and remembering what I see. I sent a detail of twenty men to the lower end of the island to dig out two old ships' gun-carriages that were nearly buried in the sand. Another squad went to the magazine for the garrison gin and all the rigging pertaining to it. The third squad was ordered to bring fifty or more boards to the upper batteries, where the entire company would report for duty. Having adjusted everything to my satisfaction, I dismissed everybody from the battery to man the "fall." Some one here made the reassuring remark that my "rigging wouldn't sustain the weight of the gun." "It must," I replied, as I anxiously noted the stretching of the "sling," and the nervousness of the legs and pry-pole of the gin as the weight of the gun began to get in its work. As the trunnions left their bed, out of the darkness (we were working by night) came the warning, "Captain, come out of the battery, or we'll have a funeral." "Only one," I said, for I would allow no one in the battery with me. I will admit that I laid my hands very gingerly on the huge gun as I swung it into position to lower it into the trunnion beds of the old ship's gun-carriage placed on the parapet to receive it. All chatter had ceased. As gently as a sleeping infant would be placed in its crib, this "Parrott" was lowered to its improvised carriage and eased down the slope of the sand battery and on to the board track on which it was to be transported to the wharf a mile away. Now a question that had been put to me a hundred times, "What are you going to do with those old boards?" was answered by the screaming trucks of a resurrected gun-carriage, as a jolly set of boys seized the drag-

rope and walked away with the gun, while "boarders were called away" to shift track. At eleven o'clock at night (we began at seven), when I dismissed the company, one of the guns was on the wharf; the other one was resting half way on the road. At ten o'clock the next morning the two guns, with 100 rounds of ammunition, were on the way to Mobile; and not the slightest accident or hitch had interrupted the work. And "what couldn't be done" was thus accomplished, chiefly by less than half a hundred black boys, and during a night as dark as their faces. That afternoon the engineer officer in charge of the work on the fort called on me and asked me if I was an engineer. I told him that I was simply an up-and-down, out-and-out Yankee; and that my chief occupation was growling at my ill luck. "Yes," he said, "I know you seem to think that you are a misfit here, but, judging from what I saw of your performance last night, I believe that Providence has placed you here; and if you will allow me, I think you had better stop grumbling." "I didn't see you at the batteries," I said. "Well, I took special pains that you shouldn't see me," he replied. "But I have come to congratulate you on the handsome manner in which you have *undone* some of *my* work. It took *me three weeks* to roll one of those guns to the battery. You have dismounted and shipped the two guns in less than six hours, and the chief part of the work was done by night. With the facilities I have, by the time I could ship the guns they wouldn't be needed." And yet, the suspicion that I had been guilty of doing anything out of the ordinary hadn't entered my mind. The rebuke for grumbling, however, I took to heart for use in all the future.

At different times we had received "distinguished guests"—for safe keeping. After the capture of Mobile, there were several thousand homeless rebels who sought shelter under our hospitable hospital tents, a large number of which we were able to command for their special benefit. And I question if they ever before during their term of service fared so sumptuously.

My second lieutenant was "commissary of prisoners," and I had ample opportunity to observe the manner in which they were entertained. Indeed, I had the honor of receiving them on

their arrival at our post, and escorting them to their Union quarters. Later I was detailed, with a guard of fifty men and an officer, to conduct about 300 commissioned officers, ranking from colonel to second lieutenant, to New Orleans for exchange. I am free to confess that this service was infinitely more congenial to me than shooting them would have been. My sympathy came quickly to the surface when the ranking officer seized my hand, and with quivering lips thanked me for the solicitude I had manifested for their comfort during the night trip to New Orleans; adding "that it was a continuation of the uniform kindness and consideration that had been extended to them on the island."

According to a provision in Jefferson Davis' "Proclamation," if captured, I would have been "*reserved for execution.*" That "Proclamation" of Jeff. Davis, promulgated on the twenty-third day of December, 1862, is a piece of the most villainous writing that has ever been brought to my notice. And I believe it to be an historical fact that the author of it died "without a country."

By a singular fatality, the close of the "War of the Rebellion" found me, after many changes of location, on duty on the desolate island where I first landed more than three years before.

But in our department there were still loose and ragged ends of the rebellion that required special attention; and the "well-seasoned" Seventy-fourth Regiment, U. S. C. I., was one of the regiments retained to perform duties with which it had become familiar, and for which no regiment was better equipped.

Patriotism, loyalty are words which were not flippantly spoken by the men of my command; but by their devotion to duty they *exemplified* their loyalty and patriotism most happily.

With strangely mixed emotions we read our orders to "proceed to New Orleans and prepare for muster-out." The sands of Ship Island were not watered with my tears. But when, on the twenty-first day of November, 1865, we received our honorable discharge from the service and our final pay, and I had performed my last official duty—distributed about \$200 company savings, giving each man his share—and then took each man by the hand and said a last good-by, something snapped.

CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1812

By **Frank Mortimer Hawes**

(Continued.)

Before continuing our account of the Charlestown schools, we wish to speak briefly of some of the earlier trustees who honored their office with years of valuable service. Charlestown can point with pride to the long list of men who served her so faithfully. One need but look to the original board of 1793 to see that only her first citizens were considered worthy to be directors of school affairs.

Trustees for 1793 and 1794, Richard Devens, Nathaniel Gorham, Josiah Bartlett, Aaron Putnam, Joseph Hurd, Nathaniel Hawkins, Seth Wyman.

1795 and 1796, the same, with the exception of Mr. Hawkins, who was succeeded by Timothy Tufts.

1797, 1798, 1799, the same, with the exception of Hon. Nathaniel Gorham, who was followed by his son, Nathaniel Gorham, Jr., and Timothy Tufts, who was succeeded by Samuel Tufts.

1800 and 1801, Seth Wyman, Samuel Tufts, Jonathan Teel, Rev. Jedediah Morse, Benjamin Hurd, Jr., Timothy Walker, Timothy Thompson.

1802, Samuel Tufts, Seth Wyman, Jonathan Teel, Captain Thomas Harris, Matthew Bridge, Deacon David Goodwin, Samuel Payson.

1803 and 1804, the same, with the exception of Samuel Payson, who was succeeded by Captain Nehemiah Wyman.

1805, Seth Wyman, Captain Harris, Matthew Bridge, Deacon Goodwin, John Stone, Peter Tufts, Jr., Joseph Phipps.

1806, Seth Wyman, Matthew Bridge, Peter Tufts, Jr., James Green, Elijah Mead, John Tufts, Samuel Thompson.

1807, James Green, Elijah Mead, Peter Tufts, Jr., Captain Daniel Reed, John Kettell, Daniel Parker, Samuel Kent.

1808, the same, with the exception of James Green, who was succeeded by Timothy Thompson.

1809, the same.

1810, the same, with the exception of Timothy Thompson, who was succeeded by David Devens.

1811, Rev. William Collier, Jonas Tyler, William Austin, Joseph Phipps, Samuel Kent, Philemon R. Russell, Ebenezer Cutter.

1812, Rev. William Collier, Dr. Abram R. Thompson, Captain Nehemiah Wyman, Captain Daniel Reed, David Stetson, Captain Joseph Miller, George Bartlett.

1813, 1814, 1815, the same.

1816, the same, with the exception of Captain Miller, who is succeeded by Isaac Tufts.

Holding over for a number of years previous to the reorganization of 1793 is the name of Nathaniel Hawkins. Wyman, who gives him the title of colonel, says that Mr. Hawkins came to Charlestown from South Kingston, R. I., and that he was recorded in the census of 1789 with his children, Nathaniel, Christopher, Sarah, and Samuel. This was after the death of the first Mrs. Hawkins, and about the time of his second marriage. Both wives were the daughters of Samuel Kent (Vol. III., p. 89). Old residents of Union square will remember the two homes of the Hawkins families in that vicinity. At his own request, Mr. Hawkins' term on the school board ended May 6, 1795, when he received the thanks of the town for his valued services. As local committeeman for Milk Row district, his name has been mentioned frequently in these articles. After 1795 we find him holding various town offices, as surveyor of highways and selectman. He died October 3, 1817, aged sixty-nine (Wyman). On the board of trustees he was succeeded for two years by Timothy Tufts, Esq., and the next in succession from their district was Samuel Tufts, 1797-1804, inclusive. For a brief account of these two brothers the reader is referred to Vol. III., p. 92.

Another name which has already received our attention is that of Seth Wyman. For several years before 1793, and for fourteen years after, 1793-1806, inclusive, Mr. Wyman served continuously on the school board, perhaps the longest of any one individual after Samuel Kent. His home was in the upper

part of the town, in what is now Arlington, near the Mystic ponds. He was the son of Hezekiah Wyman, and was born in 1750. About 1774 he married Ruth Belknap, and was the father of eight children. He died in April, 1825, aged seventy-five (Wyman).

The names of Richard Devens, Nathaniel Gorham, and Josiah Bartlett would add lustre to the history of any municipality. All three were actively engaged in town affairs during the trying days of the Revolution and in the important years which followed, when state and national constitutions were being established, and each gained for himself in his special line of service more than a local reputation. Wyman's invaluable work gives an account of these gentlemen. Hon. Richard Devens, commissary-general in the Revolutionary army, was the first president of the school trustees. His portrait, painted by Henry Sargent, 1798, and bequeathed to his native town by Charlotte Harris, hangs in the Boston Branch Library at Charlestown, City square. A later generation has made the name of Devens still more illustrious. Our interest in Hon. Josiah Bartlett, M. D., LL.D., (1759-1820) centres chiefly in his sketch of 1813, which may be called the first history of Charlestown. Hon. Nathaniel Gorham, regarded by Wyman as one of the most eminent men that ever lived in Charlestown, died while serving on the board of trustees, and was succeeded by his son and namesake the following May, 1797.

Two others elected to the original body of trustees should have more than a passing mention,—Aaron Putnam, Esq., and Joseph Hurd. The former was the first treasurer of the organization, an important office when we consider that it was for a better management of the school funds that a charter was granted by legislative act. Dr. Putnam's name deserves to be mentioned in connection with Charlestown affairs, for it was he who, in 1801, sold to the United States four acres of his own, and as agent secured sixty-five acres, exclusive of flats, for a navy yard. Joseph Hurd, if we mistake not, served as the first secretary of the trustees. He was the son of Benjamin Hurd,

and, as we understand it, brother of Benjamin, Jr., who succeeded him on the board.

It is a noticeable fact that Messrs. Devens, Bartlett, Putnam, Hurd, and Gorham, Jr., all retired from office at the same time, and few of their successors, to judge from their terms of service, enjoyed a like degree of popular favor. Jonathan Teel was one of these; he stood for the outlying districts, and continued in office until May, 1805, five years. He died in Somerville June 7, 1828, aged seventy-four, and left worthy descendants to keep the family name in prominence. John Stone and Peter Tufts, Jr., next represent our part of the town, the former serving modestly for one year, the latter for six years. Seth Wyman, the last of the original board, retired in 1807, and was succeeded by Captain Daniel Reed, who for nine years represented the upper end of Charlestown.

Hon. Timothy Walker, Timothy Thompson, Captain Thomas Harris, Deacon David Goodwin, and John Kettell are names that stand for representative Charlestown families, but perhaps the most suggestive name on the list is that of Rev. Jedediah Morse, D. D. (1761-1826). This gentleman, a native of Connecticut, a graduate of Yale, and the leading minister of Charlestown from 1789 to 1820, was at this time delighting the educational world with his *Geography*, one of the first American text-books to gain an extensive and lasting circulation. For more than fifty years it was used in all parts of the country, but the later editions bore little resemblance to the feeble little volume which first saw the light in Charlestown. It served, where schoolbooks were scarce, not only as a geography, but also as a reading and spelling book. We of to-day are favored with a reminder of this pioneer in American education every time we pass his residence, which is marked with a tablet that proclaims the birthplace of his illustrious son, Samuel F. B. Morse, 1791.

With the election in 1811 and 1812, respectively, of Rev. William Collier, pastor of the First Baptist church of Charlestown, and Abram Rand Thompson, M. D., an old-time physician, whose eighty-five years of life came to an end in his native town

in 1866, a new order of things seems to have been introduced. We will now go back to the report for 1812, the first with which we are favored after that of 1802. From now on there will be no interruptions in these reports, and from some of them we shall expect to make copious extracts.

May 8, 1812, the board of trustees organized, with Rev. William Collier, president; Abram R. Thompson, secretary; Nehemiah Wyman, treasurer, who gave bonds for \$10,000. Milk Row School, it will be noticed, at this time was represented by Captain Joseph Miller. The number of children in town was 1,167, or 457 between the ages of four and seven, and 710 from seven to fourteen. It appears that no children beyond the Neck, under seven and over fourteen years of age, were allowed to attend the town school. In reply to the complaints which came, in consequence, from the outlying districts, the report says that School No. 4 (Alewife Brook) contains thirty-four children, from four to fourteen, and yet this district receives for that number as much money as is expended within the Neck for fifty-one scholars. "This distinction in favor of the schools outside is, in the opinion of the trustees, an ample indemnification for all inconveniences arising from their local situation; besides, the money appropriated without the Neck is abundantly sufficient to defray the expenses of their schools through that part of the year when the inhabitants send their children to them, from seven years old and upward; and the expense of educating their children under seven, it seems as just and reasonable for them to pay out of their own pockets as it is for the inhabitants within the Neck to do it. When we consider that, of the 1,167 children in town, only 133 are without the Neck, or less than one-eighth, and that we expend upon them more than one-fourth of the money (contingencies excepted), it cannot be denied that the rule is not only favorable, but generous, to the people without the Neck."

The teachers of the town schools were Israel Alger, with Oliver Jaquith for an assistant, and for the others Messrs. Fuller and Stickney. There had been two public examinations of each during the year, and frequent informal visits had been made, "as

a board." As a necessary and valuable auxiliary in teaching geography, the trustees had furnished a pair of globes and a map for the use of Mr. Alger's school.

A brief allusion is made to the schools taught by women. As an application for a school for black children had been made, one was established which was kept from June to November. Some mischievous boys that were detected in petty thefts were brought before the board, admonished, reprov'd, and exhorted, and their parents acquainted with their behavior. The three schools without the Neck were all visited in the spring (1813), "and the trustees can with sincere pleasure bestow the most unqualified approbation on them." "The sum required for the current year will be \$3,000, the same as last year."

From the report read May 2, 1814:—

The writing school, kept by D. Fuller, was vacated by him May 20, and Mr. Jaquith took the charge until June 8, when David Dodge was installed. July 18 Mr. Alger suddenly resigned as principal of the grammar school, on account of ill health, and Abraham Andrews, A. B., was elected his successor August 9. Mr. Stickney, at the Neck, gave up his position January 15, and was later succeeded by John Bennett. Mr. Jaquith was retained this year as Mr. Andrews' assistant. He resigned June, 1814, and was succeeded by Robert Gordon.

February 25 the trustees visited District No. 5, which contains twenty-eight scholars, under the care of Nathaniel Green, and also that under Jacob Pierce, No. 4, which has fifty-eight scholars. April 12 they visited the school in Milk Row, No. 3, containing sixty-nine scholars, under Moses Hall. April 19 they visited the school at the Neck, with ninety pupils, under Mr. Bennett, and April 26 and 29 the two schools at No. 1, under Messrs. Andrews, Jaquith, and Dodge. "They were perfectly satisfied with the good order and improvement of all." "The schools without the Neck are kept only part of the year, and are not confined to any age." The amount spent on the schools for small children (women's schools) was \$872.48. Dr. Bartlett, in his address of 1813, says: "A public support of schools kept by women for primary instruction and free to every inhabitant,

under the direction of the trustees, though novel, is honorable to the town, and affords a pleasing presage of future improvement." If, as he says, twenty-one districts were established, and to each a schoolmistress was assigned for those from four to seven, then, as the whole number was 425, each teacher had about twenty pupils, and the cost for each child was a little more than \$2. The address also informs us that two of the school-houses on the peninsula were of brick, two stories high. In eulogistic mood, Dr. Bartlett goes on to say: "The free schools were the glory of our ancestors, they are the boast of New England, and the palladium of our future prosperity. We cannot refrain from congratulating our fellow-citizens on a situation of their public schools so auspicious to the best interests of the town, so gratifying to the dearest hopes of parents, and bearing such honorable testimony to the eminent ability and fidelity of the instructors."

The records of the school board that have come down to us begin with May, 1814. According to their By-Laws, the trustees met for organization the first Tuesday following the second Monday in January each year; other meetings to be held as desired. Special meetings could be called by the secretary on direction of the chairman or two members. The treasurer was to give bonds for \$6,000. All bills were to be examined by the chairman and secretary, and to be approved in writing, if found correct. The officers of the board were the same as last given.

August 18, 1814. Voted to Captain Miller \$250 for the use of Districts No. 3 and 4. "In November the school of Messrs. Andrews and Dodge was examined by the trustees, and a large number of highly respectable visitors. The reverend president opened the exercises with prayer. All were gratified with the behavior and proficiency of the children, and, considering the confused and agitated state of the town, this was highly honorable to the instructors. The exercises closed with prayer by Rev. Mr. Turner. February 10, 1815, the trustees met at Captain Daniel Reed's (end of the town) to visit No. 5, under Nathaniel Green (number of scholars, twenty-eight), also No. 4,

under Jacob Pierce. Milk Row (No. 3) was visited Wednesday, April 12, at 2 o'clock. Present, Messrs. Wyman, Miller, and Thompson, of the trustees. This school, under P. T. Gray, was in "a respectable state of improvement. The females at this and every examination have been distinguished for their juvenile attainments, as well as propriety of behavior."

Among the bills approved April 21 were those of A. Andrews, two quarters, \$403.39; P. T. Gray, \$82.85; Martha Ireland, \$58.50; Jacob Pierce, \$123.75; Philemon R. Russell, \$80.54.

Abraham Andrews, having resigned, was "dismissed with encomiums." At the examination, April 27, of Messrs. Dodge and Andrews' school at the town hall, "it was a delightful sight to behold 330 children, all clean and decent in their apparel, all prompt in their exercises, all animated with youthful emulation, and hope, and joy, assembled on the floor of an invaluable common privilege. The trustees will not conceal their joy and gratification in view of the interesting scene." Jesse Smith, a graduate of Dartmouth College, for the past year preceptor of New Ipswich Academy, succeeds Mr. Andrews, at the established salary of \$666.66. A school for black children, opened May 1, and kept through the summer months to the approbation of the trustees, was under the charge of Mrs. Eleanor Jackson. The sum of \$1,000 was reserved exclusively for the women's schools within the Neck. Each schoolmistress was required to make a monthly report, together with an accurate return of all children under her charge. These schools opened May 1, and closed the last of October. Five hundred children from four to seven were thus educated at the expense of the town. The report read May 1, 1815, says: "The trustees for two years past have kept a summer school at Winter Hill and the inhabitants have asked for a schoolhouse. The trustees would recommend one if, at the present time, our fellow-citizens were not struggling with great and accumulated burdens. They will endeavor to continue the school on its present establishment another year. They indulge the pleasing hope that, with the joyful return of peace, our fellow-citizens will be restored to their wonted occu-

pations, when they will cheerfully support additional means of education, as the increasing population of the town may require." (Signed A. R. Thompson.) This school was probably in the vicinity of Franklin street. Query: Was it in charge of Miss Martha Ireland, whose name has been already mentioned?

1815-1816.

May 16. Voted that Captain Miller open the summer schools in Districts No. 3 and No. 4, and Captain Reed in No. 5. Mr. Dodge is allowed \$31.25 per quarter for his son Horace, who serves as his assistant in the writing school. "Mr. Smith recommended changing the evangelical instruction for Murray's English Reader and it was so decided."

August 8 John Bennett resigned at the Neck. The trustees engaged Isaac Gates as his successor, and the same salary as for masters at other schools within the Neck was voted him, \$666.66.

April 6, 1816, David Dodge resigned as writing master, and later Robert Gordon, formerly assistant, was promoted to the mastership. Samuel Campbell was elected to second place, at a salary of \$500.

Friday, April 19, Milk Row School, under Yorick S. Gordon, was visited. Messrs. Miller and Thompson were present, with several of the inhabitants of the district. The school appeared very well, notwithstanding many difficulties under which they had labored during the winter. Mr. Gordon had discharged his duties acceptably.

May 6 the trustees met, and, taking into consideration the high price of living and, at the same time, appreciating the valuable and successful services of Mr. Gates as a teacher, recommended making him a special grant of \$40. Schools in Districts No. 4 and 5 have been kept the past winter to the satisfaction of the board.

In reference to women's schools: "By making the privilege of instruction free to all has preserved the chain of education unbroken by the distresses of the people in the shock of war, and so has been an inducement to many to remain in our town,

Happily the scene is changed." "\$4,400 will be wanted next year, in addition to the \$1,500 for small children's schools."

1816-1817.

Voted that Isaac Tufts, who has been elected a trustee, have particular charge of No. 3 and No. 4, in place of Captain Miller, resigned, and later, also, of No. 5, as Captain Reed resigned in September. In June Jesse Smith resigned as head of the reading or grammar school. He received the encomiums of the trustees. J. M. K. Wilkins was elected to fill the vacancy. Mr. Gates' salary is raised to \$800. As the number of black children from four to fourteen is only ten, it is voted not to have a school for them. Voted that District No. 3 be continued till the Saturday before the first Monday in April. Voted, April 28, to Martha Ireland, \$66.

April 15 the trustees discussed the Lancastrian plan of education, and it was voted to apply to J. Buchanan, Esq., British consul in New York, for information. From the report, signed May 5, 1817, we learn that District No. 3 is still maintaining two summer schools, namely, at Milk Row and Winter Hill. In speaking of No. 1, R. Gordon's services are highly praised.

1817-1818.

August 9, 1817, the trustees have looked up the Lancastrian system of education, and paid Mr. Dixon \$20 for his information. They decide that it is not feasible for Charlestown.

March 25, 1818. The trustees examined School No. 3. Present, Rev. Mr. Collier, Messrs. I. Tufts, P. Tufts, and Thompson. "About fifty scholars attended the examination, and appeared well in all their performances." Eighty belong to this school, kept this term by Daniel Russell.

April 3 the trustees examined School No. 4, kept by J. Underwood. About forty were present, out of a total of fifty-two. From bills mentioned, D. Russell is paid \$115, and Martha Ireland \$71.50. A clock and bell purchased by a sub-committee is presented by Captain Wyman for the exclusive use of the

school at the Neck. The report recommends the separation of the sexes in the town school. The districts without the Neck have received a liberal allowance of the money appropriated, and No. 5, in particular, has expended more money than for many years before. "It is not to be denied that our schools are expensive, but," etc., etc.

1818-1819.

According to a recommendation in the report of a committee appointed to choose a site for a girls' school, I. Prentiss and Miss S. Carlisle were hired, the former at \$800, the latter at \$400, to have charge. As Mr. Campbell's services were no longer needed, he was discharged. Interesting exercises were held at the opening of this school, September 14, 1818. Later the trustees paid on a lease of eight years \$130 for the building in which the girls' school was kept. It seems that it was built and owned by Rev. Mr. Collier, and stood adjacent to Mr. Collier's meeting house. The Baptist society was allowed the use of the building for a Sunday school. The school numbered 241 April 23, 1819. The boys' school, kept by Messrs. Wilkins and Gordon, numbered 200 in September, 1818. Miss Carlisle seems to have been the first woman to teach in Charlestown in a school above primary grade. "The trustees were of the opinion that an intelligent mistress would fill the place as well as a master." Their expectations seem to have been realized.

Isaac and Joel Tufts are to have charge of the schools without the Neck for the trustees. March 18, 1819, I. Hayward's school, No. 4, was visited. "An excellent teacher and gave fine exhibition." As the school at No. 5 was not satisfactory, it was closed early in consequence. Voted April 13 to report a statement of facts to the town respecting the territorial limits and number of children in District No. 3. This school went on very well under the care of Mr. Russell until the school-house was destroyed by fire, and so there was no regular exhibition. This fire was the third of March. "The district commences in Cambridge road, sweeps around the Cambridge line,

runs across Milk row by Isaac Tufts' to Winter Hill, by the house of Joseph Adams, Esq., to Mystic river, and down to the cluster of houses near the entrance of 3 Pole lane, and over to the place of beginning. It contains sixty-one families, and 106 children from four to fourteen, about one-third of whom are below seven years. The remaining seventy-three would be at a fair calculation the highest number to be provided for. Of these, the largest number live on the Milk Row side." This is the first report signed by James K. Frothingham, secretary of the board. The following quotations seem worthy of a place here: "In populous towns the great mass of boys from seven to fourteen cannot be employed, and it is therefore necessary to keep them constantly at school as a measure of restraint and order, but schools for girls may be suspended with perfect safety, as they can assist at home." From observation of Mr. Hayward's school, "the trustees are of the opinion that a part of the year devoted to learning and the remainder to some other employment will in the end make quite as good scholars as spending the whole year in education."

CONSTITUTION OF THE SOMERVILLE UNION BENEVOLENT SEWING SOCIETY

September 28, 1842

We, the subscribers, do unite ourselves into a society for the relief and assistance of the unfortunate and distressed, and adopt, for our regulation, the following rules:—

ART. 1. This Society shall be called the Somerville Union Benevolent Sewing Society.

ART. 2. The object of this Society shall be, to make clothing for the destitute, and assist them as far as shall be deemed expedient by the Society.

ART. 3. The officers of this Society shall consist of President, Vice-President, Secretary, Treasurer and ten Trustees, all of whom shall be chosen annually.

ART. 4. It shall be the duty of the President, to preside at all meetings of the Society, as often as they may be deemed necessary. In her absence, the duty shall devolve upon the next in office.

ART. 5. It shall be the duty of the Secretary, to keep a correct account of the proceedings of the Society, and present a report of the same annually.

ART. 6. The Treasurer shall be intrusted with the funds which shall be kept subject to the order of the Society. And it shall be the duty of the Treasurer, to present at the annual meeting an account of all the receipts and disbursements.

ART. 7. It shall be the duty of the Trustees to visit the poor and ascertain who are in need of assistance. They shall also assist in preparing and superintending the work.

ART. 8. It shall be the duty of each member to promote the interests of the Society, as far as her circumstances will admit, and to contribute such cast clothing as may be spared with convenience, to assist in sewing at the meetings, and when convenient, obtain work for the Society. Each member shall pay fifty cents annually to the Treasurer, and in proposing a friend for admission, if there be no objection, may introduce her at the next meeting.

ART. 9. The annual meeting shall be held on the last Wednesday in September, for the choice of officers and the transaction of other business. Stated meetings for work shall be held monthly, at the houses of members where it may be convenient. And during the progress of the work, a member shall be requested to read from such books or periodical publications, as may be furnished by the ladies.

ART. 10. In case the funds be not required for the assistance of the poor, they shall be reserved for the purpose of furnishing a meeting house, when the gentlemen see fit to build one.

Officers of Somerville Historical Society

1905-1906

| | |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------|
| President | Frank M. Hawes |
| First Vice-President | Levi L. Hawes |
| Second Vice-President | James F. Whitney |
| Third Vice-President | John F. Ayer |
| Treasurer | Seth Mason |
| Recording Secretary | Mrs. William B. Holmes |
| Corresponding Secretary | Florence E. Carr |
| Librarian and Curator | Alfred M. Cutler |

Council-at-Large

| | | |
|-------------------|---------------|--------------------|
| Charles D. Elliot | Anna P. Vinal | L. Roger Wentworth |
|-------------------|---------------|--------------------|

Committee on Historic Sites

| | | |
|------------------------|-------------------|---------------|
| J. O. Hayden, Chairman | Charles D. Elliot | Edward Glines |
|------------------------|-------------------|---------------|

Essays and Addresses

| | |
|------------------------|-------------------|
| John F. Ayer, Chairman | Charles D. Elliot |
| W. E. Brigham | Seth Mason |
| Mrs. J. F. Ayer | |

Library and Cabinet

| | | |
|----------------------------|-------------|------------------|
| Alfred M. Cutler, Chairman | Edith Hayes | Mrs. Helen Heald |
|----------------------------|-------------|------------------|

Photographs

| | |
|-------------------------------|------------------|
| Benjamin F. Freeman, Chairman | James F. Whitney |
| Albert L. Haskell | |

Press and Clippings

| | |
|---------------------------|---------------|
| W. P. Jones, Chairman | Anna P. Vinal |
| Mrs. Emma Prichard Hadley | Lucy M. Stone |

Committee on Publications

| | |
|---------------------------|----------------|
| Sam Walter Foss, Chairman | Frank M. Hawes |
| Sara A. Stone | Samuel Earle |

Military Records

| | | |
|---------------------------|------------------|---------------|
| J. H. Dusseault, Chairman | Alfred M. Cutler | Mary A. Haley |
|---------------------------|------------------|---------------|

House

| | |
|---------------------------|--------------------|
| Mrs. Isaac Rich, Chairman | Mrs. E. F. Hammond |
| Mrs. F. DeWitt Lapham | |

Hospitality

| | |
|----------------------------------|----------------------|
| Mrs. William B. Holmes, Chairman | Mrs. L. B. Pillsbury |
| Mrs. Mae D. Frazar | |

Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

January, 1906

Vol. IV

No. 4

CONTENTS.

| | PAGE |
|-------------------------|----------------------------------|
| SAMUEL PHIPPS | <i>Capt. George A. Gordon</i> 77 |
| THE CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS | <i>Frank Mortimer Hawes</i> 90 |

HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee
Exchange list in charge of the Librarian and Curator Alfred
Morton Cutler, 234 Medford St., to whom all communi-
cations regarding exchanges should be addressed.

PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL EARLE

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. IV.

JANUARY, 1906

No. 4

SAMUEL PHIPPS

An Early Resident of Somerville Territory

By Capt. George A. Gordon

(Read before Somerville Historical Society December 20, 1905.)

The presence of so many friends, acquaintances, and fellow-citizens is encouraging, as well as complimentary. I must regret that so many will be disappointed,—not finding in the theme of my paper this evening, or in its treatment, the interesting relation hoped for.

I come not before you this evening to give instruction to you, whose object and aim is the acquisition and dispensing of local history; but I beg to call to your minds that, at the dates covered by the theme of my paper, Charlestown and Cambridge were contiguous in territory, with a common boundary reaching from Miller's river to Burlington, Charlestown bounded with Lynn on the northeast, and with Boston on the Mystic river, as Chelsea was early a part of Boston. This most ancient town of Middlesex County was the third settlement in the limits of Massachusetts, outside of Plymouth plantation. The first Court of Assistants was held at Charlestown. In every line of business and commerce Charlestown held prominence.

Phipps is a contraction in speech of Philip, unknown in England before the Conquest, and one of many forms indicative of the popularity of the fifth apostle. The Phipps were seated in the shires of Gloucester, Worcester, Warwick, and Northampton. They bore arms and were esteemed among the gentry. The immediate family, whence the Phipps of Charlestown derived issue, were of Wiltshire, where various members of the race are on record as sheriffs.

Samuel Phipps, town clerk of Charlestown, and his neighbors dwelt within the present limits of Somerville, about 200 years ago, on Mt. Benedict. A portion of his homestead came within that part of the ploughed field which included the location of the Ursuline Convent of 1830. "Dead men tell no tales" is a well-known proverb; but allow me to deny it and to caution you regarding its acceptance. In my own case, I feel better acquainted with Solomon Phipps, carpenter, Samuel Phipps, the register, and Samuel Phipps, the town clerk, with Thomas Danforth, treasurer of the colony, and Francis Foxcroft, recorder, than I do with any considerable number of my fellow-citizens and neighbors. I know their handwriting at a glance, and have a clear and intelligent conception of their careers. The quality of the listening ear modifies the voice of the departed. "They who have ears to hear, let them hear."

Solomon Phipps, the first of the family in New England, was in Charlestown as early as 1640. He was a Wiltshire man, a carpenter by trade. His business was prosperous, and, in 1645, he took an eighth in the new mill which was established at what has since been known as the Mill Pond. Mill street, now extending from Main street to Rutherford avenue, is a survival of the original way to the mill. The rails and grounds of the Eastern freight track, Boston & Maine railroad, now occupy the site of the mill. Mr. Phipps held the property to the last, and divided the same, by his will, between his boys. At this mill Mr. Phipps prepared his lumber for his enterprises. The houses he built were of wood. Some were one, some two stories in height, with low studding, plastered inside, the beams overhead exposed, a large chimney in the centre, and that of the kitchen with a capacious oven beside it. Fuel was plenty, and large amounts were piled in the yards every winter. The homes were plain, built within frugal means, destitute of architecture, and rather evident of poverty of imagination and dearth of culture. The wealthiest inhabitants of Charlestown were the distillers, and the most numerous the bakers. Those who lived beyond the Neck kept horses and wagons, and went into town, usually on horseback, to what is now City square, for the necessities they did not

raise on their lands. No butchers', milk, fish, grocers', or coal teams made regular daily calls at those remote homesteads. How marked the change to-day! Solomon Phipps, the emigrant, died while his son, afterward the register, was in college. His grave can be shown in the old cemetery in Charlestown. It is in the front row, northwest of the gate, among his neighbors, Greene, Ryall, Peirce, Adams, Kettell, and Bunker, of which the most recent date is 1702. The hard-slate headstone, inscribed 1671, is of a texture likely to last for ages.

Samuel Phipps, the son, was graduated at Harvard College in the class of 1671, the last class under President Chauncy, and the only one in twenty consecutive years to consist of more than ten members. The illustrious member of the class was Samuel Sewall, the judge, who was on the bench at the witchcraft trials, whose diary, long since in print, is of immeasurable value, historically. Proceeding to the degree of Master of Arts, Samuel Phipps assumed the mastership of the grammar school in Charlestown, and taught it ten years. At one time he had fifty-three scholars. At the close of his school he was elected a constable at the town meeting, which he refused. The town insisted. Phipps appealed to the governor, claiming that, as Master of Arts and a grammar school master, "it was unreasonable and not customary to choose persons so qualified and improved." The government excused him, but the town still resolved not to comply with the order. Notwithstanding this breeze, Phipps served against his will, and, in the succeeding year, was town treasurer, and afterward town clerk, selectman many years, and again constable. In 1689, Samuel Phipps was elected county clerk, and served to 1723, and register of probate, 1692 to 1702, and register of deeds, 1693 to 1721. He represented Charlestown in the general court of 1692, the first under the new charter of William and Mary, which erected the colony into a province, with a royal governor. Ten other years Phipps served as representative. In 1704, he was a captain of the foot company at Charlestown.

Captain Phipps was three times married. First, in 1676, to Mary Phillips, a daughter of Henry and Mary (Dwight) Phillips,

the butcher of Dedham and Boston; second, to Katharine Brackenbury, a daughter of John and Annie (Anderson) Brackenbury, of Charlestown; and, third, to Mary Bradley, an Englishwoman from Staffordshire, and the widow of Joseph Lemmon, a shopkeeper of Charlestown. Captain Samuel Phipps died at Charlestown, August 7, 1725, in his seventy-fourth year.

In the last years of the expiring colony, while Samuel Phipps was a selectman of Charlestown, some lovers of old English sports and customs had erected in Charlestown a maypole for the ordinary May festivities. It was cut down. Directly another and bigger pole was erected, and a garland hung upon it. This was not to be endured. Increase Mather called it an abominable shame, a piece of heathenism. Selectman Phipps ordered the town watch to cut the pole down. In the resulting disturbance, the selectman and the captain of an English vessel in the port, the frigate *Kingfisher*, came to blows. The sailor captain promptly entered a complaint before the magistrate, and the selectman was put under bonds to the next court. The case never came to trial.

Charlestown "beyond the Neck" included the elevated land on the river side of the present Broadway and seat of the Ten Hills Farm, which had long been in private ownership, the "stinted commons" being on the southerly side of Broadway, and extending to the Cambridge line, "stinted" meaning bounded by defined limits. That was done in 1637. These commons lay between "the Neck, Menotomies river, and the farms of Medford and Mr. Winthrop," the ground being reserved for such cattle as "milch cows, working cattle, goats, and calves of the first year."

By the time of the three Samuel Phipps, the commerce which lingered at the port of Charlestown had tended gradually to improve the condition of provincial life. While the country folk were yet content with the wooden plates, bowls, knives, and pewter spoons of the Colonial period, and sanded their floors from the inspiration of cleanliness, the town inhabitants had pewter ware, some crockery and glass. The chair-makers developed an industry in the high-backed, split-bottomed frames,

which succeeded the stools and benches of their grandfathers. In their best rooms were solid chairs and tables, and a few books on shelves. This growth in comforts we learn from the inventories of the estates of the deceased, preserved in files of the county probate court. The domination of the godly was disappearing. The captain or lieutenant of the village was not always the deacon at the meeting house. With the advent of the province came the officials of royal authority, came commissions to the judiciary and the military, came a larger liberality in the thoughts and views of the population. The fisheries brought Spanish dollars or an exchange of commodities from foreign markets, in memory of which, to-day, the codfish hangs in front of the speaker in the people's general court. The settlers were, up to this time, purely English; so much so that the isolated individual of other British races was dubbed the Scotchman, the Irishman, the Welshman. Because they were English, they succeeded. Our annual orators on Forefathers' Day tell us the colonists succeeded because they were Puritan. I crave permission to dissent. I tell you nay. It was the stubborn nerve and fibre of the Englishman from Wiltshire, from Staffordshire, from Devonshire, from Yorkshire, from Essex, and from Sussex, which earned subsistence out of the hard soil, which on the high sea gathered the abundant fish, and, on shore, won an equal distinction and profit in New England rum, ships' masts, and hoop poles. The result is the same in Canada and in New Zealand, in India and in Cape Colony. Mark the contrast with the establishment of the Latin race in the fertile and fruitful zones of the equator. To-day the descendants of the English are building the canal, for the commerce of the world and the blessing of mankind, through the territory the others have held in possession four centuries.

During the closing quarter of the first century of Charlestown's history, that portion of her territory now Somerville had sparsely settled on its two highways, the road to Cambridge and Boston, now Washington street in our city, and the road to Medford and Woburn, now Broadway. A few farmers dwelt on the road to Cambridge, while quite a cluster of dwellings stood

on the higher ground, through which the Medford road ran. Among these was the residence of Samuel Phipps, town clerk of Charlestown, who died suddenly in February, 1731. He was a grandson of Solomon Phipps, the carpenter, and a nephew of Samuel Phipps, the recorder. His father was a son of the carpenter, Joseph Phipps, and his mother, Mary Kettell. Samuel was born 1696, town clerk 1726, and died 1730-1, leaving a widow, Abigail, and five children, Abigail, Joseph, Samuel, Elijah, and Solomon. The widow married Joseph Whittemore, Jr., and died in 1734. Mr. Phipps' real estate lay in three parcels, within the limits of present Somerville, or, as it was then expressed, "in Charlestowne without the neck." An appraisal rehearses and values it, viz.:—

Homestead, 7 acres, 21 rods on the highway leading from Charlestown to Medford, bounded by lands of widow Mary Rand, of Captain Eben Breed, by land of William Hoppin and Meriam Fosket, and by rangeways, at £55 old tenor per acre. £392 4s 4½d
Meadow, 4 acres, 54 rods, on same highway, and bounded by lands of Joseph Frothingham, Samuel Hutchinson, Nathaniel Frothingham, and rangeway, at £66 old tenor per acre. £266 5s 6d
Pasture, on highway leading from Charlestown to Cambridge, and bounded by land of Michael Brigden and a rangeway, at £35 old tenor per acre £203 4s 4d

The children being young, the estate remained unsettled till the death of the widow, when Samuel Danforth, of Cambridge, the judge of probate, and a kinsman of the family, took charge of and divided the estate, giving a double portion to the eldest son, as was common and legal in those days. His computation is entered at large on the back of the report of the committee on appraisal, and, as it affords a curious example of arithmetic, as then written, we copy the major portion of it. He first foots the several items of the appraisal, £861 14s 2½d, deducting the sum of £14 13s ½d for accrued expenses, among which is given the

following, probably an account of disbursements by the mother, viz.:—

| | |
|--|-----------|
| Betty Phips for a paire of Briches and Stockins..... | £1 10s 0d |
| do for altering seaverall things..... | £0 12s 0d |
| Mrs. Austin for altering a Gound for Abiagail..... | £0 5s 0d |
| Doct. Greaves when Sollomon Phils Was Sick..... | £1 16s 0d |
| Esqr Danford when took Gardenship..... | 15s |

The judge divides the residue, reduced to pence, into six parts, thus: crossing each digit in the dividend as he divides, which mark we omit:—

$$\begin{array}{r}
 2541(2 \ 924 \ (6 \ 82 \ (3 \\
 203294(33882 \ (2823 \ (141 \\
 66666(1222 \ (2000 \\
 \quad (\ 111 \quad (\ 22
 \end{array}$$

This is readily explainable, though it has an intricate appearance. We leave it for the solution of the reader, as the exercise will contribute to his enjoyment. Such system of ciphering has long since passed out of use and into oblivion.

The guardian's account reads:—

The Acct of What I have paid for the Childeren of Samll Phipps Lait of Charlestown Desead

To paid to

| | |
|---|-----------|
| Mr Storer of Boston for Cloathing..... | £3 18s 2d |
| Capt Johnson for triming, part for Joseph, part for Samll..... | £1 5s 9d |
| Mr Josepg Sweatsur for maiking cloaths and finding..... | £2 4s 4d |
| Mr Rand for three hats and deying Stockings 7-6 and pr Gloves 2..... | £0 17s 6d |
| Mr. Skotto for maiking cloaths and finding..... | £5 12s 9d |

Of Samuel Phipps' children, Joseph became a baker, married Elizabeth Webb, dwelt in Charlestown, and died there in 1795. He was a surety on his mother's bond as administratrix.

Elijah married in 1750, and died in 1752 of smallpox. By

order of the selectmen, his body was buried at midnight, for fear of infection.

Samuel died at the age of twenty-one.

Abigail became wife to John Blaney in 1741, and was a widow in 1746.

Solomon was a joiner, married Elizabeth, daughter of Abraham Hill. He died in 1740-42, leaving a widow and three children, Solomon, Elizabeth, and Martha.

Betty Phips, who supplies the "Briches and Stockins," was an aunt to the children, a sister of the deceased town clerk.

Mrs. Austin, who "altered the Gound," was a widow. She made her will July 4, 1745, bequeathing a slave, *Chance*, and £60 to four children, viz.: Thomas, a barber; Josiah, a goldsmith; John, a carver; and Rebecca, who married (1) Joseph Sweetser, (2) Samuel Waite, of Malden.

Dr. Thomas Greaves was the village apothecary, and one of the physicians. He died in 1746, leaving widow, Phebe, and daughter Katharine, wife to James Russell, and daughter Margaret, wife to Samuel Cary.

Of his neighbors, or, at least, his abutters, Mrs. Rand was the widow of John Rand, the maltster, and was born Mehetabel Call, of a well-known Charlestown family. She was the mother of Jonathan Rand, the hatter and dyer, who supplied the hats, stockings, and gloves mentioned in the guardian's account. He was born in 1694, and married Milicent Esterbrook, born in 1699, a daughter of Joseph. They had thirteen children. Jonathan died in 1760, and his widow married, in 1764, John Chamberlin. From 1725 till death Jonathan lived on the lot, now the east side of Thompson square, described as a mansion with seven smokes, a hatter's shop and barn. It extended from Main to Back (now Warren) street.

Captain Eben Breed was a retired master mariner, who gave his name to the elevation on which the battle of Bunker Hill was fought. He was a son of John Breed, who had been a soldier in King Philip's war, and was father to John Breed, the distiller. Breed's Island, northeast of East Boston, takes its name from this family. Captain Breed died in 1754, leaving a large estate,

appraised at £5,647 16s 1d. His will speaks of his son John, resident at Surinam, S. A., and that one's son Ebenezer.

William Hoppin was a rigger, who died a very old man in 1773. The late Rev. Dr. Hoppin, of Christ church, Cambridge, was a great-grandson.

Samuel Hutchinson, the shoemaker, lived on the road to Winter Hill.

Miriam Fosket, born in 1665, Miriam Cleveland, was widow of Thomas Fosket, a brother of Jonathan, who once owned the windmill, which he sold to John Mallet, on the southeast of the range called "Captain Carter's draught." Miriam was widowed in 1694, and died in 1745. She left a landed estate of thirty acres to son John, daughter Miriam, wife to Matthew Leaky, and daughter Abigail, wife to Thomas Powers. The Fosket family have disappeared from Charlestown, and have not been known there for a half-century. Descendants are in Worcester and Berkshire counties.

Joseph Frothingham, hatter, and Nathaniel, painter, were sons of Nathaniel Frothingham, the joiner, who married Hannah Rand, and left her a widow in 1749, with good estate. Their posterity have been among the most notable citizens of Charlestown.

Michael Brigden was a blacksmith, and a deacon in the First church. He died in 1767. His estate suffered a loss of \$500 in the burning of Charlestown by the British in 1775.

Among creditors to the estate we notice the names of Doct. Perkins, Joanna Phillips, Stephen Hall, Edw'd Lutwich, Jerathmeel Pierce, Christfr Blackford, John Smith, Margaret Rush, Dorcas Soley, Margaret Macarty, Jeffs Johnson, John Sprague, Joseph Lemmon, Joseph Stimpson, Dr Thomas Greaves, Doctor Simon Tufts, Meriam Fosket, Jonathan Call, Joseph Frost, Samll Trumbal. Many of these are still represented in the population of Charlestown and its vicinity, as well as those whose names were quoted in the inventory as holding adjacent real estate.

Stephen Hall was a Boston merchant, then meaning an importer who dealt at wholesale. He was a resident in Charles-

town, a son of Stephen Hall, the weaver and painter, who married Grace Willis.

Christopher Blackford was a victualler, who had married Sarah Kettell, a niece of Samuel Phipps' mother. Later he sustained reverses in business.

Jeffs Johnson, son of Zechariah and Elizabeth (Jeffs) Johnson, the brickmaker, was a bookkeeper in His Majesty's service. He married Sarah Orne, of Boston, and settled at Weston.

Edward Lutwyche was the landlord of the Bunch of Grapes tavern, at the head of Mackerel lane and King street, now the corner of State and Kilby streets, in Boston. In memory of the famous inn and the many feasts celebrated there, the present handsome edifice bears a pendent bunch of grapes, carved on the lintel at the corner. Long wharf came up to the head of Mackerel lane, now Doane street, in those days. The Lutwyches were English born and true to their birthright. The son, Edward Goldstone Lutwyche, was a scholarly lawyer, who was settled on or near Brenton's farms on the Merrimac river, where he established a ferry. He remained in the province of New Hampshire till the Revolution. He was colonel of the Fifth New Hampshire regiment of militia. At the outbreak of hostilities, he repaired to Boston and joined General Gage. In 1778, he was proscribed by the general court of New Hampshire, and his property confiscated. Dr. Matthew Thornton, one of the signers of the Declaration, and a busy, prominent politician, thrifty in his graft, purchased Lutwyche's farm, and the ferry has ever since been known as Thornton's. Lutwyche went to Halifax with Lord Howe, was in New York after peace was declared, returned to Nova Scotia, and ended his days there.

The father, Edward Lutwyche, came from Radnor, in Wales, and married, in 1727, Thankful Parmiter, who died in 1734. He retired in 1740 to a fine farm of 160 acres in Hopkinton, and died there in 1747.

There were two McCartys in Charlestown at the period under review, James and John, and in 1740 Thomas Maccurdy, a stranger, was buried at the town's expense.

Of Doch Perkins we find no trace. The only men of the

name in Charlestown then were shoemakers and blacksmiths, descendants of Abraham Perkins, of Hampton.

Joanna Phillips was the widow of Captain Henry Phillips, merchant, a son of Colonel John and Katharine (Anderson) Phillips, the provincial treasurer and judge. She was a daughter of Hon. Joseph and Sarah (Davison) Lynde. She was twice widowed, having first been the wife of Samuel Everton, captain of the ship, *Augustus Galley*, 148 tons.

Hannah, daughter of Jerathmeel Bowers, of Chelmsford, married Benjamin Pierce, and (?) Captain William Wilson, of Concord. She had a son, Jerathmeel Pierce, who must be the person referred to, for certainly two mortals could not both bear that name in peace in the same community.

John Smith was perhaps the cordwainer who married Anna, daughter of John Whittemore and Sarah (Hall), who became wife to Joseph Frost, as before stated.

Dorcas Soley was a daughter of John and Dorcas (Coffin) Soley, or the widow herself, who was daughter of Nathaniel and Damaris (Gayer) Coffin, a Nantucket sailor.

Thomas Powers, who married a daughter of Miriam Fosket, was a blacksmith. He died in 1759, leaving an estate of £1,057, including a negro woman, named *Essex*.

John Sprague was the gunsmith, son of Jonathan and Mary (Bunker) Sprague. His wife was Elizabeth, a daughter of Ebenezer and Thankful (Benjamin) Austin, the saddler of Charlestown. His father had been a soldier under Maudsley (Moseley) in King Philip's war. He died in 1746, leaving an estate of £5,773. His property was a house, land, and cider mill, "out of neck," house on Main street, smith shop and two tenements on Back street, one-fourth of a pew in the church, etc. His three surviving sons became iron founders. Their descendants settled largely in Malden, where the old soldier of the "Long March," Jonathan, lived.

Joseph Stimpson was the youngest son of Andrew and Abigail (Sweetser) Stimpson, housewright and shopkeeper. His grandfather Andrew was from Newcastle-on-Tyne, and wrote his name "Steauenson." To-day it is called Stephenson, Stevenson,

Stimson, and Stimpson. Joseph was graduated at Harvard in 1720, became a schoolmaster, studied divinity, was ordained and settled as pastor of the Second church, Malden, where he died in 1752.

Joseph Sweetser, who married Rebecca Austin, was a currier, the only child of Joseph and Elizabeth (White) Austin, a heelmaker in Boston. He died early, leaving two sons, and his widow married Samuel Waite, and died in 1750.

Samuel Trumbull was a tanner, son of the impressed seaman, John, and Mary (Jones) Trumbull. He owned the house of the emigrant grandfather, John Trumbull, captain of the ships *Mary* and *Blossom*, other houses, lands, wharves, still house, and tannery. He died in 1759. His son John followed the business of his father, as a tanner; so did James; but Timothy became a distiller, and married Frances, a daughter of Joseph Phipps, the baker.

John Wood, the glazier, was son of Joseph and Mary (Blaney) Wood, and brother of Joseph, who was killed by the Indians at Rutland in 1734. John married Elizabeth, daughter of Deacon John and Hepzibah (Billings) Wood, of Cambridge. He learned his trade of his father-in-law, removed to Newburyport, and died there in 1786.

Samuel Sweetser was a son of the eminent Baptist, Benjamin Sweetser, whose wife was a sister to Rev. Michael Wigglesworth, of Malden, born in 1666, married at Malden Elizabeth, daughter of John and Elizabeth (Stower) Sprague, of Malden. They dwelt at Charlestown and Malden, where both were buried, she in 1752, he in 1757.

Joseph Lemmon was a merchant, and treasurer of the town, son of Joseph and Mary (Bradley) Lemmon. His widowed mother became the last wife to the town clerk's uncle, Samuel Phipps. His wife was Elizabeth, daughter of Captain Eleazar and Ann (Foster) Phillips, a victualler and prosperous business man in Charlestown; owned wharf, slaughter house, warehouse, farms, wood lots, and negroes.

Matthew Leaky was a laborer in Boston, who married a daughter of and was administrator on the estate of the widow Miriam Fosket.

Ab. Bunker was Abigail, widow of Captain Benjamin Bunker, the innkeeper. She was a daughter of John and Anna (Carter) Fowle, the tanner.

Jonathan Call was a baker, son of Thomas and Elizabeth (Croswell) Call. His place was near the Neck, resting on the western slope of Bunker Hill. By his wife, Sarah Boylston, he had a family of sixteen children. He was the fourth generation of Calls in Charlestown who had been bakers, as was his brother, Caleb.

Joseph Frost was a native of Billerica, son of Dr. Samuel Frost. He married the widow of John Whittemore, the turner, who was a daughter of Richard Hall, of Dorchester. She died in 1716, and Joseph married (?) Hannah, daughter of Joseph and Hannah Easterbrook. In 1740 Mr. Frost, with his family, removed to Sherburn.

John Goodwin is indeterminate, there were so many of him: John, the housewright, of Cambridge, Malden, and Charlestown; John, the perruquier; John, called *tertius*; and John, a sea captain.

THE CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS

From 1819-20 (Continued).

Frank Mortimer Hawes

The trustees for the year 1817 were Rev. William Collier, Abram R. Thompson, M. D., Captain Nehemiah Wyman, David Stetson, Isaac Tufts, Peter Tufts, Jr., Elias Phinney.

1818, Rev. William Collier, A. R. Thompson, M. D., Isaac Tufts, Elias Phinney, James K. Frothingham, Joel Tufts, John Soley.

1819, Rev. Edward Turner, Samuel Payson, Isaac Tufts, Elias Phinney, James K. Frothingham, Joel Tufts, John Soley.

1820, the same.

1821, the same, except that Philemon R. Russell succeeds Joel Tufts.

1822, Rev. Edward Turner, Samuel Payson, Elias Phinney, Rev. James Walker, Joseph Phipps, Samuel P. Teel, Nathan Tufts, 2d.

1823, Rev. Edward Turner, Rev. James Walker, Joseph Phipps, Nathan Tufts, 2d, James Russell, Samuel Gardner, Leonard M. Parker.

1824, Rev. James Walker, Joseph Phipps, James Russell, Samuel Gardner, Leonard M. Parker, Chester Adams, Thomas Hooper.

1825, James Russell, L. M. Parker, Chester Adams, Rev. Henry Jackson, Lot Pool, Edward Cutter, Rev. Walter Balfour.

1826, Chester Adams, Hall J. Kelley, Nathaniel H. Henschman, Rev. James Walker, Benjamin Whipple, William S. Phipps, Rev. Henry Jackson.

1827, Rev. James Walker, Chester Adams, Lot Pool, Benjamin Whipple, H. J. Kelley, Josiah S. Hurd, Henry Jaques.

1828, Benjamin Whipple, Rev. James Walker, Chester Adams, Rev. Henry Jackson, Luke Wyman, J. S. Hurd, Robert G. Tenney.

1829, the same.

Our gleanings from the trustees' records and from their annual reports have been brought down to the spring of 1819.

May 8 of that year Samuel Payson, Elias Phinney, and Joel Tufts were appointed to select a location for the new house without the Neck, and a week later it was voted that the new Milk Row School be erected where the former one stood. Isaac Tufts and James K. Frothingham were the building committee, and it was decided to build of wood.

This house was completed in October. Its sides were filled in with brick, and it was "finished in a plain, neat style, with two coats of paint on the outside"; the cost was \$675. October 22 the school, which was in charge of Miss Charlotte Remington, was visited by Messrs. Turner, Isaac Tufts, and Frothingham. They were highly gratified with the specimens of the children's improvement, particularly in reading. This was the first examination in the new building. The winter term (1819-'20) was taught by Daniel Russell, and March 20 the school passed an examination "which was highly creditable to themselves and their instructor." There were present Messrs. Turner, Isaac and Joel Tufts, Frothingham, "and a large number of interested spectators." The whole number on the rolls was 92; present on this occasion, 35 girls and 26 boys.

October 13, the school at Winter Hill, under Miss Julia Remington, was closed. Owing to unfavorable weather, the examination which was to have been held was not attended by any of the board.

Mr. Gates, of the Neck School, resigned, much to the regret of the committee, and was succeeded, June 11, by Charles Fiske, who taught only to December 11, when Rev. William Collier was engaged. In September the lower floor of this schoolhouse was finished suitably for a schoolroom, and it was occupied by a school of small children, with a female for instructress.

Schools for poor children were held from May to November. These were in different sections of the town, and were visited November 13. The trustees found 26 under Mrs. Rea, 40 under Miss Susan Wyman, and 30 under Miss Mary Frothingham, 96 in all. These teachers received \$2.50 per week for 30 scholars.

The school for girls (over seven years of age) was kept six months, and also closed in November. In April (1820) it was

voted to pay Miss Carlisle, the assistant, one-half as much as to Mr. Prentiss, the principal.

October 20, J. M. Wilkins, of No. 1, resigned "suddenly," much to the regret of the board. He received their commendation. Edward Sawyer was appointed his successor, at a salary of \$800, "if he continues two years; if less than that time, only \$700 per annum." Later we learn that he received the larger sum. At the examination the school of Messrs. Sawyer and Gordon was highly praised. At the last visit of the trustees, there were 685 children in all the schools (not primary). Of these, 511 were present, as follows: At No. 1, 200; at the female school, 101; at No. 2, kept by Rev. Mr. Collier, 90; at No. 3, under Daniel Russell, 61; at No. 4, under Simeon Booker, 33; and at No. 5, under Charles Wyman, 26.

A reduction of salaries having been agreed upon, the sum needed for the current year will be \$3,100. No. 5 will need repairs amounting to about \$75. Joel Tufts and Mr. Frothingham are authorized to attend to these repairs. May 1, 1820, Isaac and Joel Tufts are appointed to establish summer schools without the Neck.

March 1, 1820, the trustees by vote established the holidays and vacations for the school year as follows:—

1. Wednesday and Saturday afternoons of each week.
2. The afternoon of the annual training in May.
3. General Election week, four days.
4. Artillery Day.
5. Commencement Day at Harvard College and the day following.
6. Day of military review, when holden in Charlestown.
7. From Wednesday noon immediately preceding the annual Thanksgiving to Monday morning following.
8. Christmas Day.

Schools to commence the first of May.

1820-'21.

May 23, 1820, a communication was received from Mrs. Sarah Adams (of Winter Hill), and was placed on file. This was

probably a petition for a primary school in her section of the town, and we have been given to understand that one was established about this time. It was kept in the old Tufts house, the home of Miss Abigail and Edmund Tufts.

Salaries of all male instructors, except Mr. Sawyer's, were reduced to \$600. "The established salary had been £200, and, in addition, a grant had been made which augmented the compensation to \$800." Mr. Sawyer's salary was not changed, because he had been engaged for two years at that rate. After a highly commendatory paragraph concerning this gentleman, the report adds: "Nor are the services of Mr. Gordon less important." November 8 we read that Mr. Gordon is to receive his £200 per annum and a grant of \$20 for the last quarter. Unforeseen expenses, to the amount of \$385, had exceeded the appropriation; the roof of schoolhouse No. 1 had to be shingled at an expense of \$111, and in January the same building was damaged by fire to the amount of \$65.

The female school opened May 1, and continued six months, under Mr. Whitney and Miss Carlisle. In May, 1821, before the annual meeting, this school had opened with two new teachers, Henry Bartlett and Miss Ann D. Sprague.

At the Neck Mr. Collier's resignation took effect June 20. After a short vacation there, Mr. Gragg was engaged (\$600), and began to teach July 7. "Miss Ann Brown left the occupation of the schoolroom at the Neck October 23, and Miss Sebrina Johnson engaged it on the same conditions which Miss Brown has improved it, to commence this day." Schools for poor children have been kept six months by Mrs. Rea, Mrs. Thompson, and Miss Jefferds; 68 children attended.

November 8, the money for schools without the Neck for winter schooling was apportioned as follows: \$140 for No. 3; \$125 for No. 4; \$85 for No. 5. The whole number of school children, "outside of the women's schools" (primary) was 779 at the time of their examination. Present at these examinations: at No. 1 (Messrs. Sawyer and Gordon's), 203; at the female school (Mr. Whitney and Miss Carlisle's), 122; at Mr. Gragg's, 65; at Mr. Parker's (Milk Row), 67; at Mr. Colburn's (No. 4),

37; at Mr. Wyman's (No. 5), 26. Mr. Colburn's school was examined March 22. Out of the whole number of 54, there were present 22 girls and 15 boys. "The school was addressed by Rev. Mr. Turner, and closed with prayer." No 3 at Milk Row was examined March 31; whole number under Mr. Parker, 100, but only 67 were present. The school was addressed by Mr. Turner, and closed with prayer.

Of bills approved April 9, 1821, Miss Rebecca Cutter received \$57.75. She was probably one of the summer teachers outside the Neck. The report says that schoolhouse No. 5 is a small, old building, considerably out of repair, and quite uncomfortable for the winter season. The committee is of the opinion that it is not worth repairing. "At solicitation, we recommend an appropriation." In consequence, the town voted \$250 for the erection of a new building there, it being understood that the inhabitants will add to this sum. Joel Tufts resigns in May, and he is excused with the thanks of the town for his services. Philemon R. Russell is chosen to take his place. The annual report is signed by James K. Frothingham, secretary of the board of trustees.

1821-'22.

May 14, 1821. Voted that Messrs. Tufts and Russell establish summer schools without the Neck, as in former years; that Messrs. Turner, Russell, and Tufts be a committee to attend to the erection of the new schoolhouse in Gardner's Row (No. 5), "agreeable to the vote of the town"; June 15, that Messrs. Turner and Russell examine No. 4 schoolhouse, "to see if it is necessary to have new paint." August 17, Samuel Gardner proposed to convey a lot of land a few rods south of the present schoolhouse lot (No. 5), he to have the old lot in exchange. A deed was taken from him for the new lot, with the dimensions of thirty feet on the road, and thirty-six feet, twenty-five feet, and forty feet, respectively, on the other three sides. We are favored with a complete expense account for building this new house, dated January 21, 1822:—

| | |
|--|----------|
| Gardner and Fay's bill for labor..... | \$145.76 |
| Sarah Cutter, for brick..... | 4.00 |
| John Fisk, for labor..... | 3.00 |
| David Devens, lumber..... | 60.41 |
| Ephraim Stevens, lumber..... | 80.37 |
| Devens and Thompson, for hardware and glass..... | 39.50 |
| William Flagg, for labor..... | 10.50 |
| Jonathan Gibbs, lumber..... | 4.44 |
| Samuel Gardner, labor..... | 25.00 |
| Elijah Vose, Jr., stove and funnel..... | 19.16 |
| | <hr/> |
| | \$392.14 |

This amount exceeded the appropriation, \$142.14, "and this sum has been drawn from the treasury."

As Mr. Gragg resigned at the Neck school in June, Mr. Samuel Moody took charge July 7. Up to that time, "the school was in a state of bad discipline," but now the conditions are excellent.

The schools for poor children were kept the past season by Mrs. Rea, Mrs. Thompson, and Miss Jefferds, to the full satisfaction of the board. One hundred children have attended, "and the improvement has been as good as could be expected from children in their station. For it is with regret we are under the necessity of saying that there is a great want of attention in the parents of these children, in not seeing that their children, who are entitled to this privilege, regularly attend the schools established for their advantage."

The schools for females, under Mr. Bartlett and Miss Sprague, were closed the last of October. "We are pleased to announce that Miss Sprague is again engaged for the ensuing season." Mr. Sawyer (No. 1) is highly praised, and his salary raised \$100. It is recommended that Mr. Gordon's salary be increased a similar amount. "He has been in the school for six years past, teaching writing and arithmetic."

The schools without the Neck were examined April 9, 1822, but no return was made, except of school No. 3, under Mr.

Parker, at which some handsome specimens of writing were particularly noticed. The number present, out of a total of 119, was 32 boys and 40 girls. The whole number of school children—outside the primary departments—was about 750, or 66 more than attended last year; \$3,400 will be necessary for the coming year.

1822-'23.

At town meeting May 6, 1822, John Soley, Philemon R. Russell, Isaac Tufts, and J. K. Frothingham declined to serve on the board of trustees. They received the thanks of the town for their services, and Rev. James Walker, Nathan Tufts, 2d, Joseph Phipps, and Samuel P. Teel were elected to their places. Mr. Phipps was chosen secretary. The town also voted to buy the land, with the building thereon, now occupied by the female school, but Mr. Collier declined to sell for the present.

May 11, 1822. Voted that Nathan Tufts attend to the care of the female school at Winter Hill and the school at Milk Row; that Samuel Teel have charge of the upper schools. October 22, these two gentlemen were empowered to dispose of the old schoolhouse at No. 5.

The school for females opened May 1, under Josiah Moody and Miss Sprague. In July Mr. Moody was succeeded by Melzer Flagg. The school closed the last of October. It was opened again May 5, 1823, with Luther S. Cushing and Miss Sprague as teachers. In July, No. 2, at the Neck, was vacated by Samuel Moody, and Joseph Reynolds was appointed to succeed him. Schools for poor children were kept six months in different parts of the town, under the care of Mrs. Rea, Mrs. Thompson, and Miss Jefferds. "About 100 children had this privilege."

The school at Milk Row (No. 3), under the charge of Mr. Blanchard, was examined in April, and was found in a good state of improvement. Forty-four were present out of a total of about 100. Present: Messrs. Turner, Walker, and Tufts. No. 4 and No. 5, at the upper part of the town, as far as returns have been made, have been satisfactorily kept. The whole number of children, about 760. Present at the last examination: at No. 1,

191; at the female school, 197; at No. 2, 66; at No. 3, 44; at 4 and 5, about 83. Three thousand five hundred dollars will be needed for the coming year.

The following vote, passed April 25, 1823, is interesting: "Voted that there shall be but one public examination of each school in a year, to take place some time between the fifteenth and the end of October, and that the several masters be instructed to make this examination rather an exhibition of the schools in the higher classes than a regular recitation of the whole school, and that means be used to induce the parents and others interested to attend the examination, care being taken that the exercises be generally interesting from their excellence and not wearisome from their number or length."

1823-'24.

School No. 2, at the Neck, was vacated in July by Joseph Reynolds, and Thomas Thompson was engaged for the month of August. September 1, Henry Adams was engaged, and began his labors there, at a salary of \$600. In October the school in district No. 1, under Messrs. Sawyer and Gordon, was examined and gave satisfaction. October 20, Cornelius Walker succeeded Mr. Sawyer as teacher. The female school, under Luther S. Cushing and Miss Sprague, was kept six months. The examination was highly gratifying, especially Miss Sprague's work. May 3, 1824, this school opened again, under Samuel Bartlett and Miss Sprague. The schools for poor children were also kept six months; they were examined and approved by the trustees. The school in Milk Row at its examination was found under good government and improvement.

October 31, Messrs. Turner and Nathan Tufts examined the school at Winter Hill, taught by Miss Hobbs. The number present was 41 out of a total of 50. "The scholars were examined in reading, spelling, writing, English grammar, geography, and rhetoric. In all which they have made such attainments as prove their studious habits and unremitted attention. The school was particularly distinguished for reading in a clear, distinct, and audible manner. The order and discipline were excellent."

"October 24, a remonstrance came from John Tufts and others in Ward 3 against the employment of Mr. Nathan Blanchard another winter. It was voted that, though they regret the existence of such an opposition, the trustees do not consider the case so clearly made out as to justify their rescinding the engagement which the trustees in that ward have already made. Voted that the secretary (Mr. Phipps) furnish Mr. Blanchard with a copy of this vote and the remonstrance, with the signatures thereto."

The petition of John Tufts and others, praying for the erection of a schoolhouse at some convenient place on or near the road leading from the neck of land to the Powder House, was referred to a committee consisting of Mr. Turner and Mr. Parker. Their investigations give us some interesting information:—

"The whole number of scholars at Milk Row is about 130. The distance of travel for those living on Winter Hill road, when following the Cambridge road, is over one and one-half miles; when going across lots, one mile. The distance is so great either way, and the traveling so bad across lots, especially during the winter, that a large portion of those living on that road cannot attend school. The number of scholars living on the Winter Hill road who will be accommodated by the erection of a new schoolhouse is about 55, which will leave for the present Milk Row School about 75. Again, the school at the Neck is now large and constantly growing, and it would be very advantageous to lessen the number by taking therefrom all those living beyond the Canal bridge, amounting to about 20. By annexing these to the contemplated school, the number there would be about 75. In addition, the trustees would also state that for several years past it has been necessary to employ a schoolmistress for the accommodation of those living on the Winter Hill road, and the rent of a room for this purpose has been about \$25 per year, which is not far from the interest of such a sum as would be requisite to build. The recent establishment of factories at Milk Row will much tend to increase the scholars of that school, which, together with the ordinary growth

of the town, will render the formation of a new district and the erection of a new schoolhouse, if not at this moment, surely within a short period, absolutely necessary."

February 16, 1824, it was voted to refer to the selectmen at town meeting this petition of the "inhabitants living from Mr. Joseph Adams', Senior, on Winter Hill down to Richard's tavern at the Neck." April 14, Messrs. Parker, Tufts, and Phipps were a committee appointed for contracting with some suitable person for erecting a schoolhouse on Winter Hill road. Jeremy Wilson was engaged to build a house on the Pound lot, thirty feet by twenty-four feet, at a cost of \$500. At town meeting, May 3, 1824, the committee on new school building report that it will be completed in about twenty days.

April 9, Milk Row School was examined by Messrs. Parker, Tufts, and Phipps, and a number of visitors. The government appeared very good. The scholars were examined in reading, spelling, grammar, writing, geography, and ciphering, "and some of their branches was very well." The number of children present was 56, out of a total of 107 belonging. They were addressed by Mr. Parker.

1824-'25.

As Nathan Tufts, 2d, and Rev. Edward Turner resigned, Chester Adams and Thomas Hooper "were chosen in their room." This was at the town meeting held May 3, 1824, when it was also voted to district the town for the purpose of establishing primary schools for children between the ages of four and seven, the trustees to report on the same at the next March meeting. School No. 4, near Alewife ("elewife") bridge, was to be superintended by James Russell; No. 5 by Samuel Gardner; No. 3 by Messrs. Hooper and Phipps. They were also to have charge of the new school on the Pound lot.

November 2, 1824, Robert Gordon, of the grammar school, is spoken of as lately deceased, and the vacancy is supplied by engaging Peter Conant.

It was voted at the May meeting that the female school on Austin street be kept through the year, instead of six months. Mr. Barrett (?) and Miss Sprague have continued here and given

general and great satisfaction. As the lease for this building will soon expire, it is advisable to purchase the site, or one more eligible, on which to build.

Henry Adams resigned at school No. 2 in June, when Samuel Bigelow was engaged to fill the vacancy. He has done much to raise the character of the school.

The new school on Winter Hill road was opened June 14, 1824, under the care of Miss Hobbs. This school and the one at Milk Row, under Miss Eliza Wayne, were closed in October (examined Wednesday, October 13). At the former 32 boys and 28 girls, or 60 out of a total of 73, were present, mostly young scholars. "Their performances were respectable." Present: Rev. James Walker, the president of the board, Messrs. Adams, Hooper, Phipps, and some visitors. The same gentlemen attended to the Milk Row School, where 46 out of a total of 80 pupils were present. "Their appearance and performance was well; in writing, geography, and grammar very well. Some samples of needle work, with baskets, etc., was exhibited, all neatly executed." Michael Coombs was engaged to teach the winter school at No. 3, and as it was decided to have a male teacher at the new school for four months, Messrs. Walker and Parker engaged H. F. Leonard to teach there, at \$30 per month, to begin November 15. Mr. Coombs' school was visited March 25. "Their reading, spelling, and other branches were respectable." Messrs. Adams, Hooper, Phipps, Rev. Mr. Fay, and a number of visitors were present. The school was closed with remarks by Mr. Adams and prayer by Mr. Fay. The schools in Wards 4 and 5 have been kept the usual time and with acceptance.

In considering the subject of districting the town for the establishment of primary schools, the trustees recommend that they be placed, (1) at the junction of Wapping street and Salem turnpike; (2) on Town Hill; (3) on Union street; (4) on Cordis street; (5) on Salem street; (6) at the Neck; (7) at Chelsea point. "Six schools may be sufficient, but it must depend on the number that may still be taught in private schools. It is estimated that 50 children in each school may be taught to advan-

tage, and perhaps 60 may be permitted to attend. The salary of the instructors, with room rent and fuel, would be about \$225."

February 25, 1825, the following rules for the schools within the peninsula were adopted: The hours for school shall be from 8 to 11 and 2 to 5; but from October to April, 9 to 12 and 2 to 5, except that during the shortest days the schools may be closed at sunset.

There shall be two visitations made,—from the middle to the end of April, and from the middle to the end of October.

Books recommended: Fourth class, the spelling book and "Beauties of the Bible"; third class, the same, and Murray's Introduction to his English Reader, Cummings' First Lessons in Geography and Astronomy; second class, Murray's English Reader, Murray's English Grammar and Exercises, abridged by Alger, Walker's Dictionary (abridged); first class, American First Class Book, Walker's Dictionary (abridged), Murray's English Grammar and Exercises, or the abridgment by Alger, Morse's School Geography and Atlas. The following arrangement is made for the boys at No. 1: Arithmetic—Robinson's Elements, Robinson's American Arithmetic (or Daboll's may be used), also Colburn's Mental Arithmetic.

Holidays: Wednesday and Saturday afternoons; Election week; Thanksgiving Day and the remainder of the week; Commencement Day and the remainder of the week; Christmas Day; Fast Day; first Monday in June; Seventeenth of June; Fourth of July; and the day next after the semi-annual examinations.

(To be continued.)

INDEX

- Adams, 79.
 Adams, Ashur, 45.
 Adams, Chester, 90, 99.
 Adams, Hannah, 18.
 Adams, Henry, 97, 100.
 Adams, Joseph, 99.
 Adams, Joseph, Esq., 74.
 Adams, Captain Nathan, 41.
 Adams, Mrs. Sarah, 92.
 Adams, Zabdiel, 44.
 Alewife Bridge, 44, 45, 99.
 Alewife Brook, 5, 12, 17, 18, 22, 66.
 Alewife Brook School, 14, 16.
 Alger, — 101.
 Alger, Israel, 67, 68.
 American First Class Book, 101.
 American Tube Works, 8.
 Andrews, Abraham, A. B., 68, 69, 70.
 Antigua, 23.
 Anti-slavery Society, 26.
 Arlington, Mass., 5, 14, 65.
 Atonement, The, 2.
 Augusta, Ga., 27, 34.
 Austin, Mrs., 83, 84.
 Austin, Ebenezer, 87.
 Austin, Elizabeth, 87.
 Austin, Elizabeth (White), 88.
 Austin, John, 84.
 Austin, Joseph, 88.
 Austin, Josiah, 84.
 Austin, Rebecca, 84, 88.
 Austin Street, Somerville, 99.
 Austin, Thankful (Benjamin), 87.
 Austin, Thomas, 84.
 Austin, William, 64.
 Auxiliary Educational League, 2.
 Babcock, Henry H., 10.
 Back Street, Charlestown, 84, 87.
 Balfour, Rev. Walter, 90.
 Baltimore, Md., 27.
 Bangor, Me., 25.
 Banks, General, 53, 54.
 Barrett, Mr., 99.
 Bartlett, Catherine, 39.
 Bartlett, Dr., 68, 69.
 Bartlett, Henry, 93, 95.
 Bartlett, George, 39, 44, 64, 66.
 Bartlett, Josiah, 42, 63, 65.
 Bartlett, Hon. Josiah, 39, 65.
 Bartlett, Samuel, 97.
 Baton Rouge, 53.
 Beacon Street, Boston, 27.
 "Beauties of the Bible," 101.
 Belknap, Ruth, 65.
 Bennett, Clark, 47.
 Bennett, John, 68, 71.
 Berkshire County, Mass., 85.
 Betsey, 23.
 Bigelow, Dr., 13.
 Bigelow, Samuel, 100.
 Bingham Hospital for Incurables, 2.
 Blackford, Christfr., 85, 86.
 Blanchard, Mr., 96.
 Blanchard, Nathan, 98.
 Blaney, John, 84.
 Blodgett, Mehitable, 20.
 Blood, Mr., 45.
 Blossom (ship), 88.
 Boggs, Captain, 53.
 Booker, Simeon, 92.
 Bonner, Miss Eliza, 47.
 Bonner, William, 47.
 Boston, Mass., 1, 6, 10, 26, 38, 77, 79, 80, 81, 83, 86, 87.
 Boston Branch Library, 65.
 Boston Club, The, 2.
 Boston & Maine R. R., 78.
 Bowers, Hannah, 87.
 Bowers, Jerathmeel, 87.
 Boylston, Sarah, 89.
 Brackenbury, Annie (Anderson), 80.
 Erackenbury, John, 80.
 Brackenbury, Katherine, 80.
 Bradley, Mary, 80.
 Breed, Eben, 21.
 Breed, Captain Eben, 82, 84.
 Breed, Ebenezer, 85.
 Breed's Island, 84.
 Breed, John, 84, 85.
 Brenton's Farms, 86.
 Bridge, Matthew, 44, 63.
 Brigden, Michael, 82, 84.
 Broadway, Somerville, 6, 18, 80, 81.
 Bromfield, John, 40.
 Brookline, Mass., 1.
 Brooklyn, The, 51.
 Brown, Miss Ann, 93.
 Bryant, William Cullen, 11.
 Buchanan, J., Esq., 72.
 Buchtel College, 2.
 Buck, Lieutenant-Colonel, 55.
 Bunch of Grapes Tavern, 86.
 Bunker, 79.
 Bunker, Abigail, 89.
 Bunker, Captain Benjamin, 89.
 Bunker Hill, 17, 84, 89.
 Burlington, Mass., 77.
 Eutler, General, 27, 31, 32, 49, 51, 52, 53, 55.
 Call, Caleb, 21, 89.
 Call, Elizabeth (Croswell), 89.
 Call, Jonathan, 85, 89.
 Call, Mehitable, 84.
 Call, Thomas, 89.
 Cambridge, 5, 6, 12, 73, 77, 81, 82, 88, 89.
 Cambridge Road, The, 98.
 Campbell, Samuel, 71, 73.
 Canada, 81.
 Canal Bridge, The, 98.
 Canal Street, New Orleans, La., 54.
 Cape Colony, 81.
 Cape Fear River, 33, 34.
 Capen, Elmer Hewitt, 1-3.
 Capen, Rosamond Edwards, 1.
 Capen, Ruth Paul, 1.
 Capen, Samuel Paul, 1.
 "Captain Carter's Draught," 85.
 Carlisle, Miss S., 73, 92, 93.

- Cary, Samuel, 84.
 Central Hill, Somerville, 7.
 Central Street, Somerville, 7.
 Chamberlain, John, 84.
 Chambre, Rev. A. St. John, 1.
 Chance, 84.
 Charles River, 4.
 Charlestown, Mass., 4, 5, 6, 7, 14, 18,
 19, 23, 38, 42, 43, 63, 64, 65, 66, 72,
 73, 77, 78, 79, 80, 82, 83, 85, 88, 89, 92.
 Charlestown Neck, 4.
 Charlestown Schools after 1793, 38-46.
 Charlestown Schools after 1812, 63-71.
 Charlestown Schools from 1819-21,
 90-101.
 Charlestown Schools without the
 Peninsula, 14-22.
 Chapman, Jonathan, 41.
 Chapman, Richard, 41.
 Charter of William and Mary, 79.
 Chauncy, President, 79.
 Chelmsford, Mass., 87.
 Chelsea, Mass., 38, 77.
 Chelsea Point, 100.
 Chicago, Ill., 8.
 Christ Church, Cambridge, Mass., 85.
 City Square, Charlestown, Mass., 65,
 78.
 Clark, Joseph, 47.
 Clark, Joseph H., 47.
 Cleveland, Miriam, 85.
 Coffin, Damaris (Gayer), 87.
 Coffin, Nathaniel, 87.
 Colburn's Mental Arithmetic, 101.
 Colburn, Mr., 93, 94.
 College Avenue, 14.
 College Hill, 6.
 Collier, Rev. William, 64, 66, 67, 72,
 73, 90, 91, 92, 93, 96.
 Conant, Peter, 99.
 Concord, Mass., 87.
 Concord Street, 7.
 Coombs, Michael, 100.
 Cordis, Captain, 19.
 Cordis Street, 100.
 Court of Assistants, 77.
 Cox, Lemuel, 44.
 Cummings' First Lessons in Geog-
 raphy and Astronomy, 101.
 Cushing, Luther S., 96, 97.
 Cutter, Ebenezer, 64.
 Cutter, Edward, 16, 90.
 Cutter, Fitch, 16.
 Cutter, Miss Rebecca, 94.
 Cutter, Lieutenant Samuel, 16, 19.
 Cutter, Sarah, 95.
 Daboll's Arithmetic, 101.
 Dahlgren Guns, 58.
 Danford, Esq., 83.
 Danforth, Samuel, 82.
 Danforth, Thomas, 78.
 Dartmouth College, 70.
 Davis, Jefferson, 62.
 Davis, Mary B., 10.
 Dean Academy, 2.
 Dedham, Mass., 80.
 Delta Chapter of Massachusetts, 2.
 Devens, David, 64, 95.
 Devens, Richard, 22, 39, 40, 42, 63, 65.
 Devens, Richard, Esq., 39, 40.
 Devens, Hon. Richard, 65, 66.
 Devonshire, Eng., 81.
 Dexter, Samuel, 22, 39, 40.
 Dexter, Samuel, Esq., 39.
 Dixon, Mr., 72.
 Doane Street, Boston, 86.
 Dodge, David, 68, 69, 70, 71.
 Dodge, Horace, 71.
 Dorchester, Mass., 89.
 Dow, Brigadier-General Neal, 50.
 Dow, Colonel, 27, 50.
 Dudley, General, 53.
 East Boston, 84.
 East Somerville, 8.
 Edgerley, Edward Everett, 10.
 Edwards, Mary Lincoln, 1.
 Elliot, Charles D., 23.
 Elm Street, 7.
 Emerson, Ralph Waldo, 11.
 Emerson, Rev. William, 6.
 Encyclopaedia Britannica, 2.
 Endicott, 4.
 England, 5.
 Essex, 87.
 Essex, Eng., 81.
 Esterbrook, Hannah, 89.
 Esterbrook, Joseph, 84, 89.
 Esterbrook, Millicent, 84.
 Everton, Samuel, 87.
 "Farewell Song to the Lane, A," 9,
 10.
 Farragut, Admiral, 49, 50, 51, 57.
 Fay, 95.
 Fay, Rev. Mr., 100.
 Fellows, Nathan, 47.
 Fifth New Hampshire Regiment, 83.
 Fiske, Charles, 91.
 Fisk, John, 95.
 Fitchburg, Mass., 2.
 Flagg, Melzer, 96.
 Flagg, William, 95.
 Flora of Somerville, The, 4-13.
 Fort Jackson, La., 25, 49, 50, 51.
 Fort Macomb, 50, 55, 57.
 Fort Macon, 32.
 Fort Monroe, 27.
 Fort Pike, 50.
 Fort St. Philip, 49, 50, 53.
 Fosdick, James, 15, 21.
 Fosket, Abigail, 85.
 Fosket, Jonathan, 85.
 Fosket, Meriam (Miriam), 82, 85, 87,
 88.
 Fosket, Thomas, 85.
 Fowle, Anna (Carter), 89.
 Fowle, John, 20, 89.
 Foxcroft, Francis, 78.
 Francis, Nathaniel, 21.
 Francis, Nicholas, 14.
 Franklin Street, Somerville, 71.
 French Revolution, 42.
 Frost, Joseph, 85, 87, 89.
 Frost, Dr. Samuel, 89.
 Frothingham, Captain Benjamin, 41.
 Frothingham, James K., 74, 90, 91,
 92, 94, 96.
 Frothingham, Joseph, 82, 85.
 Frothingham, Miss Mary, 91.
 Frothingham, Nathaniel, 82, 85.
 Frothingham, Captain Richard, 45.
 Frying-pan Shoals, 31, 35.
 Fuller, Mr., 67, 68.
 Gage, General, 86.
 Galley, Augustus (ship), 87.

- Gardner, Edward, 17, 18, 20, 22.
 Gardner, Henry, 18, 20.
 Gardner, James, 18, 20.
 Gardner, John, 20.
 Gardner, Rev. John, 20.
 Gardner, Lucy, 20.
 Gardner, Richard, 20.
 Gardner Row School, 14, 16, 17, 22, 94.
 Gardner, Samuel, 18, 19, 20, 21, 90, 94, 95, 99.
 Gates, Isaac, 71, 72, 91.
 George, 23.
 Gibbs, Jonathan, 95.
 Giles, Joseph B., 47.
 Gilman's Field, 11.
 Glisson, Captain, 33.
 "Gloria Patri," 3.
 Gloucester, Eng., 77.
 Gloucester, Mass., 1.
 Goodwin, Captain, 40.
 Goodwin, Deacon David, 63, 66.
 Goodwin, John, 89.
 Gordon, Captain George A., 77.
 Gordon, Robert, 68, 71, 72, 92, 93, 97, 99.
 Gordon, Yorick S., 71, 73.
 Gorham, Mary, 59.
 Gorham, Nathaniel, 21, 42, 63, 65.
 Gorham, Nathaniel, Jr., 63, 66.
 Gorham, Hon. Nathaniel, 21, 65.
 Gragg, Mr., 93, 95.
 Graves, Thomas, 4.
 Gray, P. T., 70.
 Greaves, Doct., 83.
 Greaves, Katherine, 84.
 Greaves, Margaret, 84.
 Greaves, Phoebe, 84.
 Greaves, Dr. Thomas, 84, 85.
 Greene, 79.
 Green, General, 6.
 Green, James, 63.
 Green Mountain Institute, 1.
 Green, Nathaniel, 65, 69.
 Grubb, William, 41.
 Halifax, 86.
 Hall, Moses, 68.
 Hall, Richard, 89.
 Hall, Stephen, 85, 86.
 Hampton, 87.
 Hancock, Governor, 15.
 Hancock, Captain John, 15, 21.
 Hancock, Rev. John, 15.
 Harlow, Thomas S., 1.
 Harris, Charlotte, 65.
 Harris, Thomas, 39, 44, 63.
 Harris, Captain Thomas, 49, 63.
 Hartford, The, 51.
 Harvard College, 20, 23, 38, 39, 79, 92.
 Harvard Law School, 1, 23.
 Hawes, Frank Mortimer, 14, 38, 63, 90.
 Hawes, Levi Lindley, 25, 49.
 Hawes, Sergeant, 35.
 Hawkins, Christopher, 64.
 Hawkins, Collector, 18, 19.
 Hawkins, Nathaniel, 20, 42, 63, 64.
 Hawkins, Samuel, 64.
 Hawkins, Sarah, 64.
 Hay, John, 21.
 Haywood, I., 73, 74.
 Henchman, Nathaniel H., 90.
 Henderson, Frank, 8.
 Hertzog's Religious Cyclopaedia, 2.
 Hesseltine, Major, 27.
 Higginson, Colonel T. W., 12.
 Higginson, Rev. Mr., 4, 5.
 High School, Semerville, 10.
 Hill, Abraham, 84.
 Hill, Elizabeth, 84.
 Hill, Ives, 47.
 Hill, Martha, 84.
 Hill, Solomon, 84.
 Hilton Head, 34, 36.
 Hitchings, Mrs. Augustus, 47.
 Hobbs, Miss, 97, 100.
 Hobgoblin Hall, 23.
 Holbrook, Abiah, 38.
 Holbrook, Abiah, Jr., 38.
 Holbrook, Mary Needham, 38.
 Holbrook, Samuel, 38.
 Holden, Oliver, 44.
 Holland, Silas H., 12.
 Hooper, Thomas, 90, 99, 100.
 Hopkinton, Mass., 86.
 Hoppin, Rev. Dr., 85.
 Hoppin, William, 82, 85.
 Hopping, Nicholas, 41.
 Howe, Lord, 86.
 Hurd, Benjamin, 65.
 Hurd, Benjamin, Jr., 20, 46, 63.
 Hurd, Joseph, 42, 63, 65, 66.
 Hurd, Josiah S., 90.
 Hutchinson, Samuel, 82, 85.
 Independent Christian Church, 1.
 India, 81.
 Ireland, Johnny, 47.
 Ireland, Martha, 70, 71, 72.
 Jackson, Mrs. Eleanor, 70.
 Jackson, Rev. Henry, 90.
 Jaques, Henry, 90.
 Jaquith, Oliver, 67, 68.
 Jefferds, Miss, 93, 95, 96.
 Johnson, Captain, 83.
 Johnson, Elizabeth (Jeffs), 86.
 Johnson, Jeffs, 85, 86.
 Johnson, Miss Sebrina, 93.
 Johnson, Zechariah, 86.
 Jones, Ruth, 19.
 Kelley, Hall J., 90.
 Kenney, James, 41.
 Kent, Samuel, 16, 21, 63, 64.
 Kettell, 79.
 Kettell, John, 63, 66.
 Kettell, Mary, 82.
 Kettell, Sarah, 86.
 Kilby Street, Boston, 86.
 Kingfisher (frigate), 80.
 King Philip, 84, 87.
 King Street, Boston, 86.
 Ladd, 27.
 Lamson, John, 16.
 Lamson, Joseph, 15, 16, 21.
 Larkin, John, 40.
 "Latest Word of Universalism, The," 2.
 Leaky, Matthew, 85, 88.
 Lee, General Charles, 23.
 Lemmon, Joseph, 80, 85, 88.
 Lemmon, Mary Bradley, 88.
 Leonard, H. F., 100.
 Lexington, Mass., 20.
 Lincoln Field, 7.
 Lombard University, 2.

- London, Eng., 5.
 Long Wharf, 27.
 Louisiana Native Guards, 55.
 Lowell, James Russell, 13.
 Lowell Railroad, 11, 12.
 Lutwich, Edward, 85.
 Lutwyche, Edward, 86.
 Lutwyche, Edward Goldstone, 86.
 Lynde, Hon. Joseph, 87.
 Lynde, Sarah (Davidson), 87.
 Lynn, Mass., 20, 77.
 Macarty, Margaret, 85.
 Maccurdy, Thomas, 86.
 Mackereel Lane, Boston, 86.
 Main Street, Charlestown, 78, 84, 87.
 Malden, Mass., 84, 87, 88, 89.
 Mallet, Isaac, 16, 21, 39.
 Mallet, John, 85.
 Mary (ship), 88.
 Massachusetts Bank, 39.
 Massachusetts Bay Colony, 4.
 Massachusetts Law and Order League, 2.
 Matanzas, S. S., 36.
 Mather, Increase, 80.
 Maudsley (Moseley), 87.
 Maulsby, David L., 1.
 McCarty, James, 86.
 McCarty, John, 86.
 Mead, Elijah, 63.
 Medford, Mass., 4, 41, 80, 81, 82.
 Medford Daughters of the Revolution, 23.
 Medford Street, 47.
 Memorial History of Boston, 38.
 Menotomies River, 80.
 Menotomy, 14, 18.
 Merrimac River, 86.
 Middleborough, Mass., 1.
 Middlesex County, 77.
 Milk Row, 42, 43, 68, 70, 72, 74, 97, 98, 100.
 Milk Row District, 16, 64.
 Milk Row School, 14, 15, 22, 67, 71, 91, 93, 94, 96, 98, 99, 100.
 Miller, Captain Joseph, 64, 67, 69, 70, 71, 72.
 Miller, Richard, 41.
 Miller's River, 4, 77.
 Mill Pond, 78.
 Mill Street, 78.
 Mira, 23.
 Mishawum, 4.
 Mississippi, S. S., 27, 33, 36.
 Mobile, 53, 59, 61.
 Mobile Bay, 57, 58.
 Moody, Josiah, 96.
 Moody, Samuel, 95, 96.
 Morse, Rev. Jedediah, D. D., 44, 63, 66.
 Morse, Samuel, F. B., 66.
 Morse's School Geography and Atlas, 101.
 Moses, 44.
 Mount Vernon (gunboat), 33.
 Mt. Benedict, 78.
 Munroe, Henry, 8.
 Munroe, Nancy T., 8.
 Murray's English Grammar and Exercises, 101.
 Murray's English Reader, 71, 101.
 Murray's Introduction to His English Reader, 101.
 Mussey, Miss Letitia Howard, 1.
 Mystic Avenue, 8.
 Mystic Ponds, 14, 65.
 Mystic River, 4, 11, 74, 77.
 Mystic Valley Club, 2.
 Nancy, 23.
 Neighborhood Sketch Number 8, 47.
 Newburyport, Mass., 88.
 Newcastle-on-Tyne, 87.
 New England Association of Colleges and Preparatory Schools, 2.
 New England Commission on Admission Examinations, 2.
 New England Genealogical Register, 38.
 New England Historic-Genealogical Society, 2.
 New Ipswich Academy, 70.
 New Orleans, La., 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 57, 58, 62.
 New Pearl Street, 11.
 New London, Conn., 1.
 New York, 27, 36, 86.
 New Zealand, 81.
 Normal School, Salem, 2.
 Northampton, 77.
 North Street, Somerville, 18.
 Nova Scotia, 86.
 Oak Street, Somerville, 7, 8.
 "Occasional Addresses," 3.
 Orne, Sarah, 86.
 Paige, 14, 18.
 Paine, Colonel, 53.
 Palfrey's Swamp, 11.
 Parker, Daniel, 63.
 Parker, Leonard M., 90.
 Parker, Mr., 93, 94, 95, 98, 99, 100.
 Parker, Thomas, 38.
 Parmiter, Thankful, 86.
 Paso Chef Menteur, 50.
 Payson, Samuel, 38, 45, 63, 90, 91.
 Perkins, Abraham, 87.
 Perkins, Doeh, 86.
 Perkins, Doct., 85.
 Perry, Albion A., 2.
 Personal Experience of a Union Veteran, 25-37, 49-62.
 Phi Beta Kappa, 2.
 Phillips, Ann (Foster), 88.
 Phillips, Captain Eleazar, 88.
 Phillips, Elizabeth, 88.
 Phillips, Henry, 79, 87.
 Phillips, Joanna, 85, 87.
 Phillips, Colonel John, 87.
 Phillips, Katharine (Anderson), 87.
 Phillips, Mary, 79.
 Phillips, Mary (Dwight), 79.
 "Philosophy of Universalism, The," 2.
 Phils, Solomon, 83.
 Phinney, Elias, 90, 91.
 Phipps, Abigail, 82, 83, 84.
 Phipps, Betty, 83, 84.
 Phipps, Elijah, 82, 83.
 Phipps, Frances, 15, 88.
 Phipps, Joseph, 14, 21, 63, 64, 82, 83, 88, 90, 96, 98, 99, 100.
 Phipps, Saml., 82.
 Phipps, Samuel, 77-89.
 Phipps, Solomon, 14, 78, 79, 82, 84.
 Phipps, William S., 90.
 Pierce, 79, 87.

- Pierce Academy, 1.
 Pierce, Jacob, 68, 70.
 Pierce, Jerathmeel, 85, 87.
 Pike, Major, 57.
 Pike, Mr., 45.
 Pine Street, Somerville, 7.
 Plains of Moab, 44.
 Plymouth Plantation, 77.
 Polly's Swamp, 7, 11.
 Ponchartrain, Lake, 50.
 Pool, Lot, 90.
 Porter, —, 49.
 Port Hudson, 53, 54.
 Port Royal (Hilton Head), 34.
 Pound Lot, 99.
 Powder House, 7, 16, 98.
 Powers, Thomas, 85, 87.
 Prentiss, I., 73, 92.
 Prospect Hill, 6, 7, 8, 15.
 Prospect Hill Schoolhouse, 47.
 Prospect Street, Somerville, 7, 47.
 Providence, R. I., 1.
 Putnam, Aaron, 42, 63, 66.
 Putnam, Aaron, Esq., 40, 42, 65.
 Putnam, Henry, 15, 21.
 Putnam, Israel, 15.

 Radnor, Wales, 86.
 Rand, Hannah, 85.
 Rand, John, 84.
 Rand, Jonathan, 84.
 Rand, Mary, 39, 82.
 Rand, Mr., 83.
 Rand's Woods, 7, 12.
 Raymond, Daniel, 45.
 Rea, Mrs., 91, 93, 95, 96.
 Red River, 55.
 Reed, Daniel, 17.
 Reed, Captain Daniel, 63, 64, 66, 69, 71, 72.
 Reed, Mary (Converse), 17.
 Remington, Miss Charlotte, 91.
 Remington, Miss Julia, 91.
 Republican National Convention, 2.
 Revolution, The, 23.
 Reynolds, Joseph, 96, 97.
 Richards Tavern, 99.
 Ricker, Benjamin F., 47.
 Rigolets, The, 50.
 "Rinaldo, H. B. M. S. S.," 51.
 Robinson's American Arithmetic, 101.
 Robinson's Elements, 101.
 Rockwood, Mr., 45.
 Royall, 79.
 Royall House, The Old Medford, 23.
 Royall, Isaac, 23.
 Royall, Colonel Isaac, Jr., 23.
 Rush, Margaret, 85.
 Russell, Daniel, 72, 91, 92.
 Russell, James, 39, 84, 90, 99.
 Russell, Hen. James, 40.
 Russell, Joseph, 17, 18, 20.
 Russell, Levi, 20.
 Russell, Mary (Robbins), 17.
 Russell, Philemon, 16, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 40.
 Russell, Philemon R., 20, 64, 70, 91, 94, 96.
 Russell, Phoebe, 19.
 Russell, Walter, 16, 17, 20, 21.
 Rust, Lieutenant-Colonel, 27.
 Rutherford Avenue, Charlestown, 78.
 Rutland, Mass., 88.

 Salem, Mass., 4.
 Salem Street, Charlestown, 100.
 Salem Turnpike, 100.
 Sanborn, David, 47.
 Sargent, Henry, 65.
 Savanna River, 34.
 Sawyer, Edward, 92, 93, 95, 96.
 School Holidays, 92, 101.
 School Street, 47.
 Seabrook Landing, 34.
 Second Church, Malden, 88.
 Second Ohio Light Battery, 59.
 Sewall, Mr., 45.
 Sewall, Samuel, 79.
 Sherburn, Mass., 89.
 Sherman, General T. W., 58, 59.
 Ship Island, 28, 30, 37, 49, 50, 55, 56, 57, 59, 62.
 Simmons, Sergeant, 31.
 Simonds, Silas, 39.
 Skotto, Mr., 83.
 Smith, Jesse, 70, 71, 72.
 Smith, John, 85, 87.
 Soley, Dorcas, 85, 87.
 Soley, Dorcas (Coffin), 87.
 Soley, John, 87, 90, 96.
 Somerville Avenue, 47.
 Somerville Historical Society, 2.
 Somerville Historical Society, Officers of, 24, 48, 76, 102.
 South America, 31.
 South Kingston, R. I., 64.
 South Writing School, 38.
 Speed, Adjutant, 50.
 Sprague, Ann D., 93, 95, 96, 97, 99.
 Sprague, Elizabeth (Stower), 88.
 Sprague, John, 85, 87, 88.
 Sprague, Jonathan, 87.
 Sprague, Mary (Punker), 87.
 Springfield Street, 8.
 Spring Hill, 7.
 Staffordshire, Eng., 80, 81.
 State Board of Education, 2.
 State Street, Boston, 86.
 St. Charles Street, 54.
 Stephen, 23.
 Stetson, David, 64, 90.
 Stevens, Ephraim, 95.
 Stickney, Mr., 67, 68.
 Stimpson, Abigail (Sweetser), 87.
 Stimpson, Andrew, 87.
 Stimpson, Joseph, 85, 87.
 Stoneham, Mass., 15, 39, 41.
 Stone, John, 63, 66.
 St. Paul, Minn., 1.
 Storer, Mr., 83.
 Stoughton, Mass., 1.
 Stow, Mass., 20.
 Stowers, Nicholas, 5.
 Surinam, S. A., 85.
 Sussex, Eng., 81.
 Swan, John, 19.
 Swan, Samuel, 17, 19, 20.
 Swan, Samuel, Esq., 41.
 Swaney, Sentinel, 52.
 Sweatsur, Joseph, 83.
 Sweden, 12.
 Sweetser, Benjamin, 41, 88.
 Sweetser, Joseph, 84, 88.
 Sweetser, Samuel, 88.
 Sycamore Street, Somerville, 12.

 Teel, Jonathan, 63, 66.
 Teel, Samuel P., 90, 96.

- Ten Hills Farm, 8, 11, 23, 80.
 Tenney, Robert G., 90.
 Texas, 53.
 Theta Delta Chi Fraternity, 2.
 Thirteenth Maine Regiment, 27, 37.
 Thirty-first Massachusetts Regiment, 27, 32, 36.
 Thompson, 95.
 Thompson, Dr. Abram R., 64, 66, 67, 70, 71, 72, 90.
 Thornton, Dr. Matthew, 86.
 Thompson, Mrs., 93, 95, 96.
 Thompson Square, 84.
 Thompson, Thomas, 97.
 Thompson, Timothy, 63, 64.
 Thompson, Timothy, Jr., 40.
 Three Pole Lane, 74.
 Tillotson, Mr., 45.
 Town Hill, 100.
 Tremont Street, Boston, 27.
 Trumbal, Saml., 85.
 Trumbull, John, 88.
 Trumbull, Mary (Jones), 88.
 Trumbull, Richard, 41.
 Trumbull, Samuel, 88.
 Trumbull, Timothy, 15, 88.
 Tufts, Miss Abigail, 93.
 Tufts College, 1, 2.
 Tufts, Edmund, 93.
 Tufts, Isaac, 64, 72, 73, 74, 90, 91, 92, 96.
 Tufts, Joel, 73, 90, 91, 92, 94.
 Tufts, John, 98, 99.
 Tufts, Nathan, 2nd., 90, 96, 97, 99.
 Tufts, Oliver, House, 23.
 Tufts, P., 72.
 Tufts, Peter, Jr., 21, 63, 66, 90.
 Tufts, Samuel, 21, 43, 63, 64.
 Tufts, Dr. Simon, 85.
 Tufts, Timothy, 21, 22, 63.
 Tufts, Timothy, Esq., 64.
 Turner, Rev. Edward, 90, 91, 94, 93, 97, 98, 99.
 Turner, Rev. Mr., 69.
 Twentieth Century Club, 2.
 Tyler, Jonas, 64.
 Underwood, J., 72.
 Underwood, James, 47.
 Union, Me., 26.
 Union Square, Somerville, 4, 64.
 Union Street, 100.
 United States, 31.
 "Universalism," 2.
 Universalist General Convention, 2.
 University Club, 2.
 Ursuline Convent, 78.
 "Veruna," gunboat, 53.
 Vinal, Louise A., 4.
 Vose, Elijah, Jr., 95.
 Waite, Samuel, 84, 88.
 Walker, Cornelius, 97.
 Walker's Dictionary (abridged), 101.
 Walker, Rev. James, 39, 90, 96, 100.
 Walker, Timothy, 63.
 Walker, Timothy, Hon., 66.
 Walnut Hill, 6, 7.
 Walnut Street, Somerville, 8, 10.
 Wapping Street, Charlestown, 100.
 Warren, Amos, 18, 21, 22.
 Warren Street, Charlestown, 84.
 Warwick, Eng., 77.
 Washington, D. C., 58.
 Washington, George, 43, 44.
 Washington Street, 7, 47, 81.
 Wayne, Miss Eliza, 100.
 Webb, Elizabeth, 83.
 Webb, Grace, 58.
 West Cambridge, 14.
 Weston, Mass., 56.
 West Somerville, 12.
 Whipple, Benjamin, 90.
 Whitney, 27.
 Whitney Mr., 93.
 Whittemore, Anna, 87.
 Whittemore, Jabez, 15.
 Whittemore, John, 87, 89.
 Whittemore, Joseph, Jr., 82.
 Whittemore, Captain Samuel, 18.
 Whittemore, Sarah (Hall), 87.
 Whittemore, William, 19, 22.
 Whittier, John Greenleaf, 11.
 Whittredge, Mrs., 47.
 Wigglesworth, Rev. Michael, 88.
 Wilkins, J. M., 92.
 Wilkins, J. M. K., 72, 73.
 Willis Creek, 4.
 Willis, Grace, 86.
 Willoughby, 6.
 Wilson, Jeremy, 99.
 Wilson, Sergeant-Major, 50.
 Wilson, Captain William, 87.
 Wiltshire, Eng., 77, 78, 81.
 Winter Hill, 6, 7, 18, 70, 72, 74, 85, 91, 96, 99.
 Winter Hill Road, 6, 98, 99, 100.
 Winthrop, Governor, 23.
 Winthrop, Mr., 89.
 Woburn, 14, 20, 81.
 Wood, David, 21.
 Wood, Hepzibah (Billings), 88.
 Wood, John, 88.
 Wood, Deacon John, 88.
 Wood, Joseph, 88.
 Wood, Mary (Blaney), 88.
 Woodstock, Vt., 1.
 Worcester, Eng., 77.
 Worcester County, Mass., 85.
 Wright, Timothy, 41.
 Wyman, 14, 38, 64, 65.
 Wyman, Charles, 92, 94.
 Wyman, Elizabeth, 20.
 Wyman, Hezekiah, 65.
 Wyman, Luke, 90.
 Wyman, Nehemiah, 67.
 Wyman, Captain Nehemiah, 63, 64, 70, 72, 90.
 Wyman Seth, 19, 20, 22, 40, 42, 63, 64, 66.
 Wyman, Miss Susan, 91.
 Yale, 66.
 Yorkshire, Eng., 81.
 Young, Thomas, 8.

Officers of Somerville Historical Society

1905-1906

| | |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------|
| President | Frank M. Hawes |
| First Vice-President | Levi L. Hawes |
| Second Vice-President | James F. Whitney |
| Third Vice-President | John F. Ayer |
| Treasurer | Seth Mason |
| Recording Secretary | Mrs. William B. Holmes |
| Corresponding Secretary | Florence E. Carr |
| Librarian and Curator | Alfred M. Cutler |

Council-at-Large

| | | |
|-------------------|---------------|--------------------|
| Charles D. Elliot | Anna P. Vinal | L. Roger Wentworth |
|-------------------|---------------|--------------------|

Committee on Historic Sites

| | | |
|------------------------|-------------------|---------------|
| J. O. Hayden, Chairman | Charles D. Elliot | Edward Gilnes |
|------------------------|-------------------|---------------|

Essays and Addresses

| | |
|------------------------|-------------------|
| John F. Ayer, Chairman | Charles D. Elliot |
| W. E. Brigham | Seth Mason |
| Mrs. J. F. Ayer | |

Library and Cabinet

| | | |
|----------------------------|-------------|------------------|
| Alfred M. Cutler, Chairman | Edith Hayes | Mrs. Helen Heald |
|----------------------------|-------------|------------------|

Photographs

| | |
|-------------------------------|------------------|
| Benjamin F. Freeman, Chairman | James F. Whitney |
| Albert L. Haskell | |

Press and Clippings

| | |
|---------------------------|---------------|
| W. P. Jones, Chairman | Anna P. Vinal |
| Mrs. Emma Prichard Hadley | Lucy M. Stone |

Committee on Publications

| | |
|---------------------------|----------------|
| Sam Walter Foss, Chairman | Frank M. Hawes |
| Sara A. Stone | Samuel Earle |

Military Records

| | | |
|---------------------------|------------------|---------------|
| J. H. Dusseault, Chairman | Alfred M. Cutler | Mary A. Haley |
|---------------------------|------------------|---------------|

House

| | |
|---------------------------|--------------------|
| Mrs. Isaac Rich, Chairman | Mrs. E. F. Hammond |
| Mrs. F. DeWitt Lapham | |

Hospitality

| | |
|----------------------------------|----------------------|
| Mrs. William B. Holmes, Chairman | Mrs. L. B. Pillsbury |
| Mrs. Mae D. Frazar | |

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOLUME V.

April, 1906

TO

January, 1907



Published by
THE SOMERVILLE HISTORICAL SOCIETY
Somerville, Mass.

Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

April, 1906

Vol. V

No. 1

CONTENTS.

| | PAGE |
|--|------|
| SOME OLD TREES—NUMBER 1 <i>Sara A. Stone</i> | 1 |
| GUY C. HAWKINS PAPERS—NUMBER 1 | 10 |
| CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1825 <i>Frank Mortimer Hawes</i> | 16 |

HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at 19 Central Street. Exchange list in charge of the Librarian and
Curator Alfred Morton Cutler, 234 Medford Street, to whom all
communications regarding exchanges should be addressed.

PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL C. EARLE

HISTORIC · LEAVES

VOL. V.

APRIL, 1906

No. 1

SOME OLD TREES. — NUMBER 1

By Sara A. Stone

The full title of this paper should be "Old and Historic Trees in and about Boston," for some of the trees mentioned are simply old, and have no connection with history properly speaking; that is, they are not connected with events of importance in the nation's annals.

There are a number of trees now standing which date back as far as the Revolution, a time which is rich in "local color." The Washington elm is the first of these to occur to the mind. Of the trees simply ancient, the Waverley oaks and the Hemlock wood of the Arnold Arboretum are prominent examples. Around these trees there is an atmosphere which fires the imagination. We long for the genius and the pen of a John Muir to penetrate the mystery and interpret the charm which surrounds these patriarchs. The emotion they awake is akin to awe, and is like that which inspired the writers of some of the grandest psalms, the psalms of nature. It stirs the reverent side of our being, while the feeling with which we view a tree like the Washington elm, in addition to our respect for its age, is that of pride and patriotism.

When we think of the events which have happened since the time of the early settlers, when this tree was young, or in its prime,—their struggles with nature and the Indians, sometimes with each other, the events which led to the Revolution, the birth of the constitution, the rise of the anti-slavery movement, and the final triumph of its advocates, the progress of science, the inventions which contribute so much to our happiness, the birth of

literature and art in America,—when we think of what all this means, the thought of human achievement stimulates us to try to keep up to the high standard set by our predecessors, especially those who rocked the “cradle of Liberty” in the troublous times preceding the Revolution.

On the first complete map of Boston, drafted by Captain John Bonner in 1722, is a record of three trees only, standing at the time the first settlers came. One of these, represented as the largest, was the “Old Elm” on Boston Common, blown down in the great storm of 1876. The two others were near the middle of what is now Park street, both long since victims of the march of time. A chair made of the wood of the “Old Elm” is now in the Boston Public Library. One of its descendants was planted on the hill where the Soldiers’ Monument stands in 1889, but it is not marked.

Shawmut, as the new settlement was first named, thus presented a striking contrast to Charlestown, which is said to have been covered with timber at that time. Fuel was obtained from Deer Island. So the first duty of the new comers was to plant trees, and with an eye to domestic economy the first trees planted were probably fruit trees.

There were large gardens on the summit of Beacon Hill, and also some belonging to the residences along Summer street. A quaint story of one of these old gardens is given in an article entitled, “A Colonial Boyhood,” in a recent number of the Atlantic Monthly, and it runs as follows:—

“Come with me out of the Subway station at Scollay Square. You will have been expecting to plunge at once into the bustle and hurly-burly of one of the busiest corners of Boston, a passing glance at Governor Winthrop’s statue your only tribute to old times. But we have been traveling not only under the streets of the city, but through two centuries and a quarter of time, and emerge to find ourselves on the outskirts of Boston, on the hill-side road which in the old days skirted the foot of Cotton Hill. We are higher up in the world than we had expected to be, and the water of the town cove comes in nearly to the foot of the hill on which we stand.

Gift

The Society

O 25 '06

"A more distant outlook is over the roofs of houses and the masts of ships to the beautiful land-locked harbor and island-studded bay. In another direction, where we had thought to see the massive pile of the new Court House, a steep, grassy knoll rises behind the scattered houses, which with their gardens lie between it and the road.

"Let us enter the front gate of the nearest of these houses. An old gentle-woman and a child, perhaps five years of age, are walking in the 'South garden which lieth under it.' They are none other than little Nathaniel Mather, Increase Mather's second son, and his grandmother, Mrs. Richard Mather, with whom he is spending the day. . . . They have a basket between them in which to gather fruit, and the grandam is telling her little charge that she picked the first apples that grew on that early tree, long ago when Grandfather Cotton lived there and was minister to the first church."

While we are in this hill garden, let us take a look across the basin of the Charles and see if we cannot perceive the outlines of another orchard lying in the edge of Watertown, which was planted about the same time on land which Simon Stone chose for his dwelling-place soon after his arrival in 1636. The old gardens on Beacon Hill have long ago made room for modern buildings, but one of the trees of the orchard in Watertown, a pear tree, is still standing in Old Cambridge Cemetery, twisted and gnarled by the storms of two hundred and sixty years. Until within a year or two, it has borne fruit, hard and knotty like its own trunk.

Tree vandalism is not a new thing, for in 1635 the town passed an order to "prevent the trees planted in the settlement from being spoiled." So tree-planting went merrily on, with as little conception of the great events which should take place under their branches a hundred years or more later as we have when we plant for the future on Arbor Day.

Of the other trees on Boston Common, the oldest are those in the Beacon street mall, set out in 1815 or 1816. This was the mall which Doctor Holmes so loved, where the Autocrat and the Schoolmistress were walking that famous morning when

they decided to take the "long path" for life, together. This mall was also the scene of the farewell parade of the regiment which afterward covered itself and its young commander with glory at the siege of Fort Wagner, an event which is now fittingly commemorated by a magnificent bronze bas-relief.

Several old trees once stood close about the Common, planted probably soon after those first ordinances for the purpose. "The finest English elm in town" stood alone in its glory in what was known as Phillips pasture on Fort Hill, and dated probably from 1700. There was also a very tall English elm on Sudbury street, on the old Storer estate; and on the edge of High street, in what was then Quincy place, stood three handsome English elms, supposed to have been set out early in 1700.

Opposite the Old Granary Burying Ground stood a row of fine trees, which originally formed an avenue known as Paddock's Mall, which were planted in 1762. As Paddock was coach-builder to the Tory gentry, these were spared by the British during their occupation of Boston, but the trees suffered, later, from the hands of the patriots. Some of them survived until 1874, when they were removed, an act which excited the indignation of Longfellow, and doubtless others, when he read in the morning paper the news of the felling of the last of the Paddock elms. An elm, believed to have been one of the Paddock elms transplanted, was sacrificed in the location of the Congregational building. Had it been within the Granary Burying Ground, perhaps it might have been saved. "The Listener" has this to say about the Paddock elms and the Old Granary Burying Ground:—

"The missing foliage of the majestic collection of British elms that Major Adino Paddock, the London coach-maker, planted and guarded through his life against all indignities more vigilantly than the city forester of our times did, is made good to some extent by the Granary Burying Ground's trees, which go to form one of the most important and characteristic features of the old town. Seen from Washington street, as one turns into Bromfield street, this high bank of massed frondage is crowned in just the right place by a segment of the dome, that in the sun-

light is itself a sun-burst, and tree-tops and the dome's pure arc together lead the mind along to the green and gold of the common, whose 'contiguity of shade' is only separated from the Granary's by the beautiful spire of Park-street church. As one faces the solid and glorious greenery of the common, shot underneath with streaks of yellow sunshine on the slants of the hill-sides, one agrees with Professor Sargent that the room in the Subway was well lost to save every rood of this oasis, magnificent heritage from the old Boston of our pride, when sentiment was ever first and the material considerations second."

Perhaps the most famous of all the Boston trees no longer in existence was the old "Liberty tree," near the tavern of the same name, the latter still standing in 1883. The junction of Essex and Washington streets, which was in Revolutionary days known as Hanover square, was marked by a number of splendid elms, the largest of which was first called the "great tree." It was not till 1765 that the name "Liberty tree" was given it, at a patriotic celebration in honor of the expected repeal of the Stamp Act. It had already figured in many demonstrations of revolutionary feeling. On the repeal of the Stamp Act, in 1766, all the trees in Hanover square were decorated to assist in the jubilant celebration which followed; and at that time a plate was affixed to the "Liberty tree"; it read, "This tree was planted in 1646, and pruned by order of the Sons of Liberty, February 14, 1766." This would prove the tree was one of the very earliest in Boston. The grand old patriarch witnessed and inspired many stirring scenes after that, during Revolutionary times, for the anti-tea party was organized here November 3, 1773, and the Sons of Liberty always met beneath its branches, or in the tavern close by, until it was cut down by a party of roistering British in 1775, when it supplied the Tories with fourteen cords of wood. The trees in the Granary Burying Ground were planted in 1830; those on Copp's Hill in 1843.

Leaving Boston, our first thought turns naturally toward historic Cambridge, where we shall find many old trees. The first of these to pass before our mind's eye is the Washington elm. A monument set at its base bears this inscription, written

by Longfellow: "Under this tree Washington first took command of the American army, July 3, 1775." This is perhaps the best known of all living American trees, the most honored, and certainly one of our oldest trees. It is said that Washington had a platform built in its branches. One writer on old trees says that in 1850 "it still retained its graceful proportions, its great limbs were intact, and it showed few signs of age."

From the Washington elm imagination takes a short step to the "spreading chestnut tree," dearly loved by Longfellow, and made famous by him in two poems. In the poem of "The Village Blacksmith," the most familiar of these, he has endeared to us that homely vocation and exalted the dignity of labor thereby. Blessed is he who can truthfully say:—

"Something attempted, something done,
Has earned a night's repose."

The graceful act of the children of Cambridge in presenting him with a chair made of the wood of the tree was as gracefully recognized by Longfellow in his poem, "From My Armchair." The chestnut tree grew at the corner of what is now Story street and Brattle street, opposite the Washington school. A fine elm is standing now on the opposite corner, and the branches of the two trees must have formerly arched together. A fine elm grows beside Craigie House, far over-topping it.

The group of willows on Holmes' field, originally a marshy lowland, are supposed to be a relic of the first palisado built to protect the infant town from Indians and wild beasts.

Harvard College yard can boast of a liberty tree and a rebellion tree, though they are not known by these names. The first stood south of Harvard Hall, and witnessed many gatherings of students in revolt against unpopular tutors. The name was afterward transferred to the Class Day tree. The rebellion tree, standing at the eastern front of Hollis Hall, was planted in 1792, and was the centre of patriotic meetings, and also meetings for the purpose of protesting against what they considered college injustice and tyranny.

The father of Colonel T. W. Higginson set out many of the

trees in the yard about 1818. To President Josiah Quincy, also, we owe much of the beauty of the college yard.

Inseparably connected with Harvard College and Cambridge is the thought of Lowell and his beloved Elmwood. Among its noble trees are two sturdy elms brought from England before the Revolution. Lowell's fondness for these and other trees near his home often crops out in his letters and poems. The group of willows on the bank of the Charles river near the Longfellow park are especially notable. Three of them are included in the River Front park.

"These willows, doubtless of an older date than the town of Cambridge itself, apart from their romantic association with a poet's nook of inspiration, should certainly be cherished for their own beauty and venerable dignity, which cannot fail to impress one gazing up at their gnarled and time-worn branches." This spot is called one of the most sacred in all sacred Cambridge. The neighborhood of the common may be called one of the most beautiful, from the profusion of elm and other trees which adorn it, many of them in their prime.

A short distance over the Cambridge line, in Arlington, stands the great Whittemore elm, which is said to have been set out by Samuel Whittemore in 1724. Not very long ago there were two trees, standing on opposite sides of the street, which together formed a most imposing entrance to the pleasant town of Arlington.

In an article on historic trees in the *New England Magazine* for July, 1900, from which many of the statements in this paper are taken, we note that the elm outranks all others in the number of times it is mentioned. Elms, singly or in groups, are mentioned thirty-five times, while oaks are mentioned only six times, fruit trees nine times, willows and pines three times, other common trees only once. Elms brought from England are mentioned eight times. The reasons for choosing the elm as a shade tree might be given as follows: It is comparatively rapid in growth, is safely transplanted, requires little care, admits of severe pruning, and combines in a remarkable degree, when old, size and beauty. Oaks, having a long tap root, thrive best on the spot where the acorn is planted.

While the Waverley oaks are not as large nor as old as the big Redwoods of California, they are the largest and oldest trees we have, and we are correspondingly proud of them. Doubtless there is not another group of such notable trees in the eastern states. There are twenty-five of them, the largest sending up its trunk eighty feet into the air, and measuring eighteen and one-half feet, five feet above the ground. In 1845, one of the smaller trees was cut down. Lowell counted the rings and found they numbered seven hundred and fifty. So that Agassiz' estimate that they must be in the neighborhood of a thousand years of age was not far wrong. The distinguishing mark of the oak is its horizontal branching. Dr. Holmes has spoken of this and says: "All the rest of the trees shirk the work of resisting gravity; the oak alone defies it. It chooses the horizontal direction for its limbs, so that their whole weight may tell, and stretches them out fifty or sixty feet, so that the strain may be mighty enough to be worth resisting." Here is an object lesson from nature, illustrating the strenuous life advocated by President Roosevelt.

Here also is the repose which comes from native strength and endurance working in harmony with the laws which underlie all nature. For eight hundred years or more these trees have braved the storms of winter and thrived under the sun and rain of summer. Like the Redwoods of California, they are our "emblems of permanence."

"There needs no crown to mark the forest's king."

In their patient strength they seem to tower above all petty human concerns, and yet—is not the human mind and soul greater still?

The Waverley elm, near Beaver Brook, must be at least one hundred and fifty years old.

Closely associated with the oaks in point of age are the trees of the Hemlock wood in the Arnold Arboretum. One writer calls it as primeval as those forests described by Longfellow in "Evangeline." An atmosphere of mystery and solemnity pervades these woods; the very earth is carpeted in order that the silence may be more profound. The height of the trees,

some of which rise a hundred feet, their straight trunks relieved by glints of sunlight, is ever an inspiring sight. On a quiet Sunday morning we may

“Find tongues in trees, books in the running brooks,
Sermons in stones, and good in everything,”

while sitting on the slope of this hill. The silence is relieved by frequent bird-songs, and the sombre hues of the evergreens by the flash of the tanager's wing as he flits to and fro.

Many of the towns around Boston are the proud possessors of single trees of noble dimensions, and it is hoped they may long be landmarks. Milton, Dedham, and Quincy all boast of trees worth mention on the point of age and beauty. In Dedham and Quincy are trees which figure on the seals of those towns, and there is a tradition that a large pine tree in Malden served as the model for the tree on the seal of the state of Maine. The Dexter elm, in Malden, on the corner of Elm and Dexter streets, must be at least two hundred years old. The Stone elm, East Watertown, stands near the corner of Washington and Grove streets. It is said to have been brought from Fresh Pond in 1763.

On the Brooks estate, at West Medford, are several old trees, and some of them, the hickories, if tradition may be believed, were in their prime at the time of the Revolution. A black walnut was planted on the estate some time previous to 1768. Mr. Peter C. Brooks set out a horse-chestnut in 1810, and an elm tree at a later time.

On Main street, Medford, are three elm trees which are of interest, not so much from their age, which is said to be fifty or sixty years, but from the fact that their immediate ancestor was brought from England in a bandbox at an early date.

Until within ten or fifteen years a row of fine elm trees could be seen over-topping the houses along Inman street, Cambridge. They marked the line of an old road, which is shown on all Revolutionary maps, which led from Charlestown to that part of Cambridge where the City Hall now is. A very few of these trees are still standing.

(To be continued.)

GUY C. HAWKINS PAPERS.—NUMBER 1

In 1905 the Somerville Historical Society received through Mrs. Alice E. Lake, one of its loyal members, a package of papers that formerly belonged to her father, the late Guy C. Hawkins, of Somerville. They were all penned with his own hand. Several of these documents relate to the separation of Somerville from Charlestown, and possess much general interest. They give us some idea of the feeling which prevailed in this section before the decisive step was taken. It is the purpose of the editor to give to the public some of these manuscripts from time to time. The one selected for this number of "Historic Leaves" bears no date, but from another, which appears to be a rough draft from the one in question, we infer that it was written in 1824 or 1825, and that the statistics were taken from the town records for the fiscal year 1823-4. It will be noticed that Mr. Hawkins classes himself among "the young men."

(The orthography is that of the original.)

Petitioners for a Separation of the Town of Charlestown.

Names of Resident

| Landholders | Houses &c | Acres | Tax |
|----------------|----------------------------|-------|--------|
| Samuel Tufts | House, Barn & out B. . . . | 93 | 107.06 |
| John Ireland | Do do | 31½ | 29.18 |
| Simeon Copps | Do " | 47½ | 45.17 |
| Samuel Kent | Do " | 57 | 29.50 |
| Thomas Rand jr | Do " | 7 | 11.25 |
| Jonathan Kent | . . . . . | .. | 3.15 |
| Hall J. Kelly | House Barn &c | 24 | 41.70 |
| Isaac Tufts | House Barn &c | 102 | 62.11 |
| Bernard Tufts | Do do | 86 | 91.81 |
| Joseph Adams | Do do | 100 | 86.20 |
| Asa Tufts | Do " | 74 | 71.85 |
| John Tufts | Do " | 62 | 52.83 |
| Amos Hazleton | Do " | 13¾ | 19.67 |

Names of Resident

| Landholders | Houses &c | Acres | Tax |
|---------------------------|------------------------------|------------------|-----------|
| Christopher Hawkins | Do " | 7 | ..... |
| David A. Sanborn | $\frac{1}{2}$ Do " | 42 | 27.12 |
| Robert Sanborn | Do " | 6 | 10.71 |
| Nathan Tufts 2d | House Barn &c | 20 | 33.82 |
| Alex. Geddes | House & Factory | .. | 20.46 |
| William Munroe | Do Shop | .. | 12.12 |
| Robert Vinal | Do Barns &c | .. | 15.89 |
| Phillip Bonner | Do | 4 | ..... |
| C Harrington | House Barn &c | 17 | 19.15 |
| Edwin Munroe | Do do | 4 $\frac{1}{2}$ | 10.60 |
| Joshua Littlefield | Do do | .. | 13.74 |
| Charles Tufts | House Barn &c | 6 $\frac{1}{2}$ | 25.72 |
| Benj. Hadley | Do do | 15 | 25.70 |
| Joel Tufts | House Barn &c | 50 | 39.12 |
| Nath. H Henchman | Do " | 8 | 43.55 |
| William Dickson | Do do | 10 | ..... |
| Wm. Whitmore | Do " | 36 | 36.96 |
| John Swan | House Barn &c | 35 $\frac{1}{2}$ | 18.16 |
| Henry Gardner | Do do | 32 | 15.36 |
| Thomas Hutchinson | House Barns &c | 52 | 34.16 |
| Daniel Tufts | House Barn &c | 16 $\frac{1}{2}$ | 38.89 |
| John Odin | Do do | 4 | 50.29 |
| A Spalding | House | .. | 5.74 |
| John Runey jr | House Barns &c | 18 $\frac{1}{2}$ | 28.85 |
| Thomas Rand | House Barn &c | 48 | 36.17 |
| (38 Resident Landholders) | | | |
| Young men | | | |
| William Rand | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| G C Hawkins | . . . . . | .. | 9.41 |
| Samuel Adams | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| J C Magoon | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| Asa Tufts 2d | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| Oliver Tufts | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| Daniel Stone | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| (7 young men) | (total) | 1130 Acres | \$1236.17 |

| Names of Tenants | Houses &c | Acres | Tax |
|--------------------------|-------------------------------|-------|----------|
| A Newhall | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| John Tufts jr | House Barn &c | 30 | 30.81 |
| Benj Tufts | do | 51½ | 36.52 |
| David Wait | . . . . . | .. | 11.68 |
| A Barnard | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| S Gerrald | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| Joseph Miller | . . . . . | .. | 11.47 |
| Joseph Miller jr | . . . . . | .. | 6.94 |
| E Gaffield | . . . . . | .. | 2.(torn) |
| Samuel Shed | . . . . . | .. | ..(torn) |
| Samuel Frost | . . . . . | .. | (torn) |
| Luke Wyman | House Barns | 148 | 66.22 |
| A Pierce | Do " | 27 | ..... |
| Zeba Thayer | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| J Barker | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| S Saunderson | . . . . . | .. | 11.57 |
| E Cobbet | House Barns &c | 235 | 190.21 |
| M Griffin | ½ do & Brickyard | .. | 10.93 |
| J Clark | . . . . . | .. | 6.39 |
| J Ward | . . . . . | .. | 4.44 |
| J Kidder | . . . . . | .. | 8.33 |
| J Sowden | House Barn &c | 33 | 36.94 |
| A Stone | ½ do | .. | 5.74 |
| S Perry | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| H Shapley | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| A Richardson | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| D Angier | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| J Lovett | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| J Taylor | ½ House & Brickyard | .. | 11.57 |
| J Blanchard | . . . . . | .. | 11.23 |
| D Davis | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| J H Hill | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| 32 Tenants) | | | |
| Non-resident Landholders | | | |
| Benjamin Joy | House Barn | 140 | 113.20 |
| Wm Buckley | . . . . . | .. | ..... |
| Jotham Johnson | . . . . . | .. | ..... |

| Non-resident Landholders | Houses &c | Acres | Tax |
|-----------------------------|------------------------------|------------|-----------|
| A Davenport | | 69 | 24.08 |
| N Goddard | | 8 | 6.59 |
| S. Watson | | 6 | 2.38 |
| T. Foster | | 33 | 44.17 |
| Benj. Rand | | 5 | ..... |
| A. Cutter | | 3½ | 2.27 |
| Wm Hunnewell | | 1 | ..... |
| T. Goddard | | .. | |
| W. C. Phipps | | .. | |
| J Phipps | | .. | |
| N. Austin | | .. | |
| A. Ward | | 10 | 19.44 |
| Wm Frost | | 22½ | 8.54 |
| F. Sawyer | | 4 | 2.59 |
| L. Tappan | Bleachery & Printing | | 64.80 |
| | | <hr/> | <hr/> |
| (18 N. R. Landholders) | | 829 | \$792.86 |
| | | 1130 | 1236.17 |
| | | <hr/> | <hr/> |
| | | 1959 | \$2029.03 |
| Swan, Reed & Wyman | | 200 | 80. |
| | | <hr/> | <hr/> |
| | | Acres 2159 | \$2109.03 |

Remonstrants against a Separation of the Town of Charlestown.

Names of Resident

| Landholders | Houses &c | Acres | Tax |
|---------------------|-------------------------|-------|-------|
| A Babcock | House & Store | 18½ | 57.36 |
| Edward Cutter | Do do | 43 | 41.47 |
| Fitch Cutter | do “ | 8 | 14.27 |
| Timothy Tufts | do “ | 3½ | 19.89 |
| T Sargent | do “ | 5 | 2.50 |
| (torn)nny | do “ | 5 | 25.51 |
| (torn) Torry | do “ | 58 | 53.80 |
| (torn) eph Adams jr | House Barn &c | 25 | 27.44 |
| James Russell | do “ “ | 41 | 41.70 |
| P. R. Russell | do “ | 70 | 54.14 |
| S P Teel | do “ | 22 | 18.91 |

| Names of Resident Landholders | Houses &c | Acres | Tax |
|----------------------------------|---------------------------|-------|----------|
| Eb. Cutter | | 6 | 10.18 |
| T Gould | 2-3 do 1-3 Brewery . . . | .. | 39.22 |
| J Hager | House & Store | .. | 15.13 |
| E Lampson | . . . . . | .. | ..... |
| L Stanton | | 6 | 5.63 |
| Samuel Gardner | House Barn &c | 55 | 27.02 |
| Jonathan Teel jr | House Barn &c | 36 | 16.92 |
| Jonathan Teel | | 71½ | 41.40 |
| (18 Resident Landholders) | | | |
| N. R. Landholders | | | |
| C Thomson | | | |
| Wm. Wyman | . . . . . | .. | ..... |
| N. Wyman | . . . . . | .. | ..... |
| W Dale | . . . . . | .. | ..... |
| C Wright | | 16 | 6.16 |
| (5 N. R. Landholders) | | | |
| Tenants | | | |
| Charles Bradbury | House & Brickyard | | 16.11 |
| Jacob Page | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| S Childs | . . . . . | .. | 10.93 |
| I Thorning | . . . . . | .. | 8.33 |
| Benj Parker | . . . . . | .. | 8.10 |
| A Cook | | 11 | 19.34 |
| A Larkin | | 6 | 4.12 |
| A Dickson | . . . . . | .. | ..... |
| Clark | | | 6.38 |
| 9 Tenants | | | |
| Young men | | | |
| C Bradbury jr | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| J. Hager jr | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| Wm A Russell | . . . . . | .. | 9.74 |
| T Teel | . . . . . | .. | 3.15 |
| N. Lampson | . . . . . | .. | 4.77 |
| S Lampson | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| S Gardner jr | . . . . . | .. | 2.50 |
| (7 young men) | | 507 | \$622.30 |

| Names of Common Laborers | Houses &c | Acres | Tax |
|-----------------------------|-------------------------|-------|-----------------|
| E Whitney | | | |
| N J Varnum | | | |
| S Sawyer | Tenant | | 15.20 |
| R Judkins | at Sawyers | | 2.50 |
| A. Thurston | do | | 2.50 |
| A. S. Tandy | do | | 2.50 |
| E. Chillis | at Greenleafs | | 2.50 |
| J Cooper | | | 6.75 |
| W Walsh | | | 26.10 |
| T Greenleaf | Tenant | | 14.75 |
| W Wilcolm | | | 11.25 |
| W Hovey | Tenant | | 7.25 |
| J Barry | | | |
| S Gillen | | | |
| C Knight | | | |
| J Green | at Brew house | | 2.50 |
| P Greenleaf | at Childs | | 2.50 |
| J W Loring | Tenant | | 5.73 |
| A Wheeler | | | |
| D Titus | at Torrys | | 2.50 |
| E Pearson | at Cutters | | 2.50 |
| D Ames | Tenant | | 6.42 |
| B Parker | | | 8.03 |
| H Hutchinson | at Parkers | | 2.50 |
| W Butler | at Bradburys | | 2.50 |
| J Mears | " Do | | 2.50 |
| L Stevens | at Cutters | | 2.50 |
| G Knowlton | at Do | | 2.50 |
| L Hathern | at Do | | 2.50 |
| J Jeemes (?) | ..... |  |  |
| L Blodget | | | |
| C Ford | at Torrys | | 2.50 |
| 32 Common Laborers | | | 139.18 |
| | | | 622.30 |
| | | | Tax paid 761.48 |

CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1825**By Frank Mortimer Hawes**

(Continued.)

It was voted in May, 1825, that Messrs. Edward Cutter, Chester Adams, and Rev. Henry Jackson of the trustees have charge of the Milk Row and Winter Hill schools; that Miss Charlotte Wayne be employed at the former, and Miss Eliza Wayne at the latter, to teach twenty weeks, at \$4.00 per week; and that Miss Sarah Perry be engaged for school No. 4 for the same time, at \$3.17 per week. Mr. (James) Russell was empowered to secure a teacher for ward 5, at \$3.00 per week. Voted that schools without the Neck be no longer permitted to be closed on the afternoon of Wednesday, and that five and one-half days' services each week be required of the instructors.

October 4, the president, L. M. Parker, reported that he and Captain Cutter had visited the school at Milk Row on Friday last. Fifty-two scholars were present out of a membership of seventy-five. The same date it was voted that schools in wards 3 and 6 be provided with a master the ensuing winter by Messrs. Cutter, Adams, and Jackson, and that Messrs Parker and Russell attend to that duty for wards 4 and 5. October 6 Miss Perry's school was examined, also Miss Cutter's (ward 5). October 14 the Winter Hill school was examined. Number enrolled, thirty-five boys and twenty-three girls; present, seventeen and eighteen respectively. There were present of the trustees Messrs. Adams, Jackson, Cutter, and Pool. Remarks were made by several of these gentlemen, and the exercises were closed by an address to the Throne of Grace by Rev. Mr. Jackson. Mr. Joshua O. Colburn was employed to teach the winter school at ward 3 five months, to begin the first Tuesday in November, at \$30 per month; Mr. John Parker, of Chelmsford, was engaged for the ward 6 school, at \$32, from November 15; Philemon R. Russell, Jr., received the appointment to ward 4, at \$27; and Bowan A. Tufts for ward 5, at \$26, both to begin

November 1 and to continue through the season. The number of pupils without the Neck in October was 199; in the whole town, 1,144. Of bills approved at this time, Charlotte Wayne received \$84; Eliza Wayne, \$88; Cornelius Walker, \$200; Sarah Perry, \$63; Jane Hobbs, \$16; Eliza Ann Cutter, \$60; Samuel Bigelow, \$150; and (in February) Samuel Barrett, \$150.

Seven primary schools went into effect May 16, 1825. They were located according to the recommendation of last year. For the first time we are permitted to give the names of the primary teachers of Charlestown, for up to this date, except for a brief period about 1813, these schools were of a private character, and the mistresses depended upon their patrons for reimbursement. They were: Mrs. Polly Jaquith, Mrs. Mary Thompson, Mrs. Hannah Rea, Mrs. Mary Walker, Miss Lucy Wyman (succeeded by Miss Rebecca French), Miss Adeline Hyde, and Miss Roxanna Jones. The whole number in these schools was 445; present at the examinations, 385. "The trustees are free to declare their belief that the benefit of these institutions will fully meet the most sanguine anticipations of their friends. The children are put upon a regular course of instruction, alike in all these schools, and are kept in good order. The trustees are confident that a school of fifty children of ordinary capacity, from four to seven, who shall give their general attendance, will be far better prepared to enter the higher schools than the same number have heretofore been when promiscuously admitted from private schools." The estimated expense for the coming year is \$6,000. Signed by Chester Adams, for the Secretary.

1826 - 27.

Voted that Mr. Hall J. Kelley have charge of wards 3 and 6, and Mr. Nathaniel H. Henchman of wards 4 and 5. These gentlemen were requested to draft a set of rules and regulations for the schools outside the Neck, and to report the same to the board. Later, on the death of Mr. Henchman, "whose appearance and deportment gave promise of a valuable and efficient

service," William S. Phipps, of the trustees, was assigned to Mr. Henschman's place on committees. Mr. Benjamin Whipple was made secretary of the board in place of Mr. Jackson, who was ill. Samuel Bigelow is still teacher of the school at the Neck. Voted that salaries for teachers of summer schools outside the Neck shall not exceed the sums allowed last year, and that the length of the term be the same, twenty weeks. Voted to pay the primary teachers a salary of \$225 each. The trustees also considered the expediency of allowing the female scholars in the primary schools to practice needle work. Of bills approved in May, Cornelius Walker received \$200, Samuel Barrett, \$151.88 (teacher of the Female school), and Peter Conant, \$200.

Thursday, September 21, 1826, the ward 4 school under Miss Knight was examined by Messrs. Kelley and Phipps. "The school is in a condition to deserve their unqualified disapprobation." "They made an attempt to visit school No. 5, kept by Miss Frost, but owing to a want of punctuality on their part in regard to the hour assigned for it, they found the school-house closed and consequently no examination of that school took place." Friday, September 22, Messrs. Kelley, Phipps, and Whipple visited schools No. 3 and 6. "The former, kept by Miss Flanders, owing to the great number of very small children with which it was crowded, was found in rather a languishing condition. No. 6 at Winter hill, under Miss Whipple, was found in a state of improvement seldom surpassed by schools of that class, which evinced great industry and attention in the scholars, and some capacity and faithfulness on the part of the teacher. The very flattering condition of this school may also be justly attributed to another cause, and which ought not to be overlooked or disregarded; the scholars, forty-four in number, not one of whom were absent at the examination, exhibited an appearance of neatness in their persons and of attention and docility in their deportment which proved that they had not been neglected at home; that the parents had contributed their full share to the prosperity of this school."

October 3, 1826, Ann E. Whipple and Miss Flanders each

received \$75 for services. It was voted that Miss Whipple be permitted to continue the school at Winter Hill two weeks longer.

Voted that the winter schools outside the Neck be for five months in wards 3 and 6, four months in ward 4, and three months in ward 5; that Mr. Phipps be empowered to procure wood for the school at the Neck and at Winter Hill, and that Mr. Kelley perform a like duty for the other outside schools. It appears that Mr. Kelley, himself a teacher in Boston, but a resident on Somerville soil, was the author of a spelling book which the trustees voted not to introduce into the Charlestown schools.

November 7, of bills approved, Hersina Knight received \$65; Martha Frost, \$62.30.

April 3, 1827, "voted that teachers of the grammar schools (within the Neck) must be present at their schools ten minutes before the time appointed to open, which must be at 8 o'clock A. M., and two o'clock P. M., precisely. No scholar is to be admitted without written excuse from his parent, guardian, or master, and no scholar shall be admitted on any pretense after school shall have been opened fifteen minutes."

The winter schools without the Neck were examined as follows: No. 6, by Messrs. Jackson and Whipple, the others by Messrs. Walker and Kelley. The number of scholars on the rolls was, eighty-two for Milk Row, forty for ward 4, thirty-eight for ward 5, and sixty-seven for ward 6 (Winter Hill). The teachers of these schools received for services as follows: Ezekiel D. Dyer, \$150; Philemon R. Russell, Jr., \$112; Charles Tidd, \$102; Andrew Wallis, \$160. In the report for ward 6 we read: "This school in point of order and discipline has deteriorated since our last visit. The teacher, although he has been uncommonly industrious and devoted, yet a want of that system and method so essential was very apparent. The writing was generally very ordinary, but the trustees do not mean to be understood to say that nothing useful has been taught or learned in this school. On the contrary much has been attempted and learned beyond the requirements of our public schools."

Cornelius Walker ended his labors as teacher of the "Latin Grammar school" October 24, and went to the Eliot school in Boston. Charles Peirce was chosen his successor. The salary of male teachers within the peninsula was \$600 at this time. Josiah Fairbanks was appointed to the female school in Austin street, as Mr. Barrett resigned in July. Miss Ann D. Sprague, assistant, resigned (March, 1827) and was succeeded by John Holroyd. "This school contains 250 females whose character and habits are rapidly forming, and who are soon to exert a silent but powerful influence upon the manners and morals of the community around them. The building is badly constructed and much crowded. The standard of public education is undoubtedly rising in consequence of the establishment of the primary schools." The number in the primary grades is 476, in the grammar and writing schools, 632. The estimated current expense is \$6,500. Signed by Benjamin Whipple, Secretary.

1827 - 28.

* The schools without the Neck were put under the charge of Messrs. Kelley and J. Stearns Hurd, and May 19, Miss Ann E. Whipple was assigned to the Milk Row school. "The committee to whom was referred the subject of alterations and repairs on the schoolhouses beyond the Neck, reported (May 25) that it appeared upon examination that the house at Milk Row had been cleared of its desks, benches, etc., by Mr. Kelley, and that a new arrangement of the same had been commenced by him, the exact plan of which they had not ascertained, and that the work was suspended by your committee until they should receive further order from the board. It is the opinion of your committee that the schoolhouse at Winter Hill may be made convenient and comfortable by merely placing the desks farther apart and altering the form of the seats, with the addition of crickets, without the removal of the partition or the addition of a porch." The committee was given full powers with reference to both houses. Miss Susan Ann Warren began the summer term at Winter Hill June 4; the next week Miss Gardner

at No. 5, and Miss Ann Brown at No. 4 opened their schools. The last mentioned, being transferred to one of the primary schools on the peninsula, was succeeded by Miss Elizabeth Gerish, July 3. About this time Mr. Kelley resigned, and Chester Adams was assigned to his place on committees. At the same meeting it was voted to authorize the treasurer to purchase three maps of the world and three of the United States for the three grammar schools. The outside schools had their usual fall examinations in October. Dr. Hurd was authorized to secure teachers for the winter school in wards 4 and 5. Ira Stickney was engaged for the Milk Row school, and Joel Pierce for the Winter Hill road. The former was relieved February 5, 1828, on account of ill-health, and the latter probably did not serve that season, as the teachers, according to pay-roll, were Philemon R. Russell, Jr., \$124, Bowen A. Tufts, \$98, and A. G. Hoit, \$137.60. Bills approved: Elizabeth D. Gardner, \$63.40; Ann E. Whipple, \$80; Susan R. Warren, \$80; Elizabeth Gerish, \$52.31.

In the autumn of 1827 the people at Milk Row were allowed to use their schoolhouse during the recess for a private school. No 2 primary school was vacated by the death of Miss French, and Miss Ann Brown was given the position. "The trustees have considered it expedient to continue the children in the primary schools until they are eight years old."

In the eight primary departments there are 533 scholars, with from thirty-five to seventy-five in each. In the three grammar schools there are 691. "The trustees call attention to the poor state of the school on Town Hill. The interior was originally intended to meet the purposes of a schoolhouse, and to accommodate the town with a place of meeting to transact the public business, and so it has been used many years. The forms and desks were always inconvenient, and are now so much worn as to be entirely unfit for use. The floors and stairs are also in bad condition. The expense of refitting will be \$500." The next year we learn that these repairs exceeded the appropriation by \$180.

In consequence of the unsatisfactory conditions at the

female school on Austin street, as noticed at the end of the previous year's report, we find from the warrant for town meeting, to be held March 5, 1827, that measures were taken for a new school building. The site afterwards chosen was on the Training field, and the building committee, consisting of Thomas Hooper, Josiah Harris, and Lot Pool, made their final report in the following December. We learn that the building was fifty-six by thirty-two feet, and stood on a piece of land with ninety-one feet frontage (other dimensions given), and that in the yard was a good well of water with a pump. The entire cost was \$5,859.92, which left a deficit of \$1,359.92 above the \$4,500 appropriated. In the school report for this year we find that \$300 had also been appropriated for building a primary schoolhouse in the yard of the female school. The records state that on the completion of the Training field school the female school in Austin street removed thither, and Mr. Holroyd, having resigned, Lemuel Gulliver was chosen his successor.

Mr. Aaron Sargent, who lately addressed the alumni of the Bunker Hill school (January 30, 1906), and whose address was subsequently printed in the *Somerville Journal*, thinks the new building above referred to was probably the forerunner of the Bunker Hill school, and was located near the present one of that name. He was doubtless led to this opinion because he interpreted the wording of the original warrant, "within the Neck," to mean "at the Neck." I have shown in previous articles that other careful historians, even Frothingham and Wyman, were led astray in some of their references to a school at the Neck. If anyone will take the trouble to re-read the previous articles in this series, I think he will find, substantially, all that can be known about the Neck school up to the time which we are considering. In 1827 there was a brick schoolhouse there of several years' standing, and, as Mr. Sargent says, in May, 1830, the town voted to repair this building at an expense of \$300. The records of the school board are so explicit that the new building of this year can be no other than the one at the Training field.

The Bunker Hill Aurora, Vol. 1, under date of December

20, says: "A new brick schoolhouse on part of the Training field was erected and occupied early in the last month. The building is 56x32 feet and two stories in height. It has one room with 144 seats, and two small rooms in each story. The cost was \$5,500. There are now 200 to 250 pupils, or 90 to 100 in the first story, where writing and arithmetic are taught, and 120 to 140 in the second story, where they are instructed in reading, grammar, geography, etc. All the scholars are girls. The boys attend at the old brick schoolhouse near Rev. Mr. Fay's. Children are admitted between seven and fourteen years of age. Near by is a primary school, now having sixty to seventy pupils between four and seven years of age, and also kept open the year round."

From this same newspaper we learn other interesting facts relating to schools.

"The highest salary paid to male teachers (in Charlestown) is \$800, which does not include the profits of some of them in the book and stationery trade."

The Rev. James Walker, of the board of trustees, and later the president of Harvard College, delivered the Phi Beta Kappa oration at the commencement exercises August 29, 1827. The next year, June 14, 1828, he delivered the Election sermon.

A number of advertisements relating to private schools in Charlestown appear in this volume:—

Female School

"The winter term of Miss Mary A. Clark's school for the instruction of young ladies in the solid branches of education will commence on Monday next. Application for admission to this school may be made to Benjamin Swift, Chester Adams, Henry Jaques, committee. Charlestown, November 15, 1827."

June 7, 1828, the private school kept by Nathaniel Magoun opens.

Under date of August 9, 1828, appears the notice of a select school to be kept by Moses A. Curtis. Latin and Greek will be taught.

But most interesting of these advertisements is the following, under date of February 9, 1828:—

“The Ursuline Community,

Mt. Benedict, Charlestown,

Admits ladies from six to fourteen years of age. The garden has two acres, the whole farm twelve acres. Each pupil is to bring with her her bed and bedding, six towels, six napkins, and her table furniture, consisting of table and tea spoon, knife, fork, and tumbler, all which will be returned at her departure. The uniform of the young ladies consists, on week days of a gray Bombazette dress, and white on Sundays. Three months' notice of a removal is requested. No boarder is allowed to sleep out, except in case of illness. Permission to drive out is given once a month. No visitors are allowed on Sundays. The religious opinions of the children are not interfered with. Terms: Board and tuition per annum payable quarterly in advance, \$125. Ink, quills, and paper, \$4.00. Books at the store price. Extra charges: For each of the languages, except English, per quarter, in advance \$6.00; piano, \$6, harp \$10, guitar and vocal music, \$6. Use of instruments, \$1. Flower, landscape, and figure drawing, \$6. Painting on velvet, satin, and wood, \$6; ditto in oil colors, \$6. Dancing at the master's charge.

The first care is to instruct pupils in the great and sublime truths of religion, etc. The other objects of instruction are: English, French, Latin, and if required, Spanish and Italian (grammatically), history, ancient and modern, chronology, mythology, geography, use of the globe, astronomy, composition, poetry, rhetoric, logic, metaphysics, moral philosophy, writing, arithmetic, geometry, every kind of useful needlework, etc.”

We will close our account of this year with Rules and Regulations of Charlestown Free Schools for the Government of Schools without the Neck.

The children shall be at least four years old.

Children shall commence their course with a spelling book, such as may be agreed upon by the Trustees, and shall use no

other in school until they can read and spell promiscuously and with readiness all the reading and spelling lessons, and shall have learned perfectly all the stops and marks, and their use, the abbreviations and the use of numbers—and letters used for numbers—in reading.

The teachers shall divide this part of their schools into such classes as they may think proper. The scholars in each school who shall have attained the knowledge of the spelling book required above, shall be divided into four classes for the purpose of reading, spelling, geography, and English grammar, and the following are the books to be used until further order of the trustees:—

Fourth Class.—Spelling book and Testament. This class shall be exercised daily in spelling from the Testament as well as from the spelling book.

Third Class.—Murray's Introduction to his English Reader and Cummings' First Lessons in Geography and Astronomy. This class shall be exercised in spelling from the "Introduction."

Second Class.—Dictionary (Walker's), Murray's English Reader, and Murray's English Grammar, abridged by Alger.

First Class.—Dictionary and the Grammar (continued), American First Class Book, Morse's Geography and Atlas. The teachers will be careful that none be advanced to a higher class until they shall have made such progress as fitly to entitle them to preferment.

In the study of arithmetic the scholars shall first attend to Robinson's Elements. They may also be examined in Colburn's Mental Arithmetic, after which the American Arithmetic by Robinson is recommended.

The teachers will see that the children have constant and full employment, and give close application to their studies. Whispering and talking should not be tolerated for a moment. A school should be a place of order and industry, each scholar attending to his own lessons without noise or disturbance of any kind.

The teachers are required to maintain good order by a pru-

dent and vigilant course of discipline, and a failure in this respect will be considered good cause for removal.

The hours of school shall be from 9 to 12, and from 1.30 to 4.30, except through the three summer months, when they shall be from 8 to 11 and from 2 to 5. Teachers shall be punctual and require like punctuality of their scholars.

The following shall be the holidays: Fast Day, the Day of the General Election, Fourth of July, Thanksgiving Day, and the rest of the week thereafter. The afternoons of Saturdays.

A SHORT AUTOBIOGRAPHY OF GUY C. HAWKINS

[In connection with the Guy C. Hawkins papers begun in this issue of Historic Leaves, the following short autobiographical scrap may be of interest. We are indebted to Mrs. Alice E. Lake for this contribution.]

It is a melancholy pleasure to look back upon those who have passed away, who exist in our memories, as the relics of departed joys, and who yet make up a part of the countless ligaments which bind us to life. The changes of a short transitory life are matters of little moment except to the individuals themselves, unless the example is a warning or pattern to those who come after us.

I was born and bred in a village of New England contiguous to the capital, the son of a farmer of some property, formerly an officer in the army of the Revolution. The individuals composing this community were in a comparative equality, for although a part were owners of the soil and others but tenants and laborers, yet industry gave all an independent support, and the children of the whole mingled together in the same free school.

Educated thus, I imbibed a domestic spirit, which has held by me through life. For in my early days I discovered that in my own happy country there was a leaven of aristocracy work-

ing in the veins of the showy and fashionable part of the community, independent of that natural superiority which grows out of acknowledged integrity and intelligence.

The first nineteen years of my life were spent with my father and brother in the cultivation of the soil. During this period I had gone through the course of a common English education, had something of a taste for reading, and was acquainted with some of the best English authors. This period I consider the holiday of my existence. Blessed with parents who had watched over me from my infancy with unceasing kindness, surrounded with equals who had grown up with me from the cradle, divested of cares and anxieties which cling to us in maturer life, I scarcely had a wish unsatisfied.

At this period one of my brothers had engaged in mercantile pursuits, and I united my fortune with his. I spent one year in the Southern states and then returned to the metropolis of New England, and for thirteen years continued my commercial operations. We were not engaged in foreign trade, but our transactions in the productions of the Southern states and in the manufactories of our own were extensive.

Officers of Somerville Historical Society

1906-1907

| | |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------|
| President | Frank M. Hawes |
| First Vice-President | Levi L. Hawes |
| Second Vice-President | James F. Whitney |
| Third Vice-President | John F. Ayer |
| Treasurer | Seth Mason |
| Recording Secretary | Mrs. William B. Holmes |
| Corresponding Secretary | Mrs. Ella P. Hurd |
| Librarian and Curator | Alfred M. Cutler |

Council-at-Large

Charles D. Elliot

Miss Anna P. Vinal

L. Roger Wentworth

Committees for Year 1906-7

Publications

Sam Walter Foss, 249 Highland Ave. Sara A. Stone, 19 Central St.
Frank M. Hawes, 257 School St. Samuel C. Earle, 7 Electric Ave.

Military Records

Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St. L. L. Hawes, 164 Highland Ave.
John H. Dusseault, 42 Sargent Ave. Miss Mary A. Haley, 117 Summer St.

Hospitality

William B. Holmes, 60 Heath St. Mrs. L. B. Pillsbury, 17 Dartmouth St.
Mrs. William B. Holmes, 60 Heath St. Mrs. H. M. Heald, 438 Broadway
Mrs. F. D. Lapham, 3 Hathorn St.

Necrology

Professor D. L. Mauley, 80 Curtis St. Miss E. A. Waters, 132 Perkins St.
Rev. Francis A. Gray, 19 Dartmouth St.

Historic Sites

Joseph O. Hayden, 174 Summer St. Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.
Aaron Sargent, 290 Broadway

Essays and Addresses

John F. Ayer, Wakefield Miss Florence E. Carr, 89 Oxford St.
Seth Mason, 32 Madison St. William E. Brigham, 4 Hillside Ave.
Mrs. J. F. Ayer, Wakefield

Library and Cabinet

Alfred M. Cutler, 234 Medford St. Miss Edith B. Hayes, 52 Dartmouth St.
Mrs. L. L. Hawes, 164 Highland Ave.

Photographs

Benj. F. Freeman, 2 Mt. Vernon St. Albert L. Haskell, 422 Somerville Ave.
James F. Whitney, 40 Dartmouth St. Mrs. C. L. Maynard, 14 Greenville St.

Press and Clippings

Miss Lucy M. Stone, 15 Central St. Miss Annie S. Gage, 32 Marshall St.
Miss Anna P. Vinal, 9 Aldersey St. Mrs. Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.
Mrs. Ella P. Hurd, 55 Columbus Ave. Miss Mary E. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.

Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

July, 1906

Vol. V

No. 2

CONTENTS.

| | PAGE |
|---|------|
| ELIZUR WRIGHT'S WORK FOR THE MIDDLESEX FELS <i>Ellen M. Wright</i> | 29 |
| GUY C. HAWKINS PAPERS—NUMBER 2 | 40 |
| CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1825 <i>Frank Mortimer Hawes</i> | 46 |

HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at 19 Central Street. Exchange list in charge of the Librarian and
Curator Alfred Morton Cutler, 234 Medford Street, to whom all
communications regarding exchanges should be addressed.

PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE.

SAMUEL C. EARLE

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. V.

JULY, 1906

No. 2

ELIZUR WRIGHT'S WORK FOR THE MIDDLESEX FELS.

By Ellen M. Wright.

(Condensed.)

No man, however gifted, sets his pen to work for right against might or mammon with any great chance of becoming anything but poorer, and in 1839, after seven crowded years of such work in the anti-slavery cause, two events occurred which brought Mr. Wright so near destitution that for a number of years his life was a hand-to-hand fight with the wolf at his door. In 1837, while secretary of the American Anti-Slavery Society in New York, he chanced, at De Behr's repository of foreign books, to come upon a cheap copy of La Fontaine's Fables in the French, with some 200 wood cuts in it. His little son, he tells us in his introduction to his translations, was just "beginning to feel the intellectual magnetism of pictures," and, to please him, he bought the book. The pictures alone, however, were not enough to satisfy the child; he must have the stories, too; and from putting them into English by word of mouth, the father became quite as fascinated as the child; and finding no English version, "resolved to cheat sleep of an hour every morning till there should be one." A year later, at the call of the "political action" abolitionists, of which he was one, he left the national society to become editor in Boston of the Massachusetts Abolitionist, the state organ of his party. The committee under which he acted, however, did not feel sustained in employing him a second year. As they were poor as well as prudent, they were also unsustained in paying him fully for the first. In this strait, the publication of the fables, the music and merit of which had

so beset him in his translating as to turn his task into the most irresistible of pleasures, did not seem so forlorn a hope, or an investment so very unpromising, and under the encouragement of his generous and well-to-do brother-in-law, who was ready to help him financially, he ventured upon the undertaking,—doing editorial work for other anti-slavery papers in the meanwhile, and importing for his fables the expensive and speaking illustrations of Grandville. While the publication was in process, his brother-in-law failed, and the cost became wholly Mr. Wright's. His earnings were hardly enough for home needs, and there was nothing to do but to take his book from door to door. He did this, going from city to city, first in his own country, and then in England and Scotland. It took three hard, desperate, courageous years, but every copy of the edition was at last sold, and his debts paid; not wholly from the proceeds of his sales, but from them and later earnings.

It was while pushing this cruelly slow work in London that Mr. Wright first realized the great necessity of parks to crowded and growing cities. In England he kept sharp watch on all from which he could get knowledge or inspiration.

Mr. Wright's discovery of the Fells was not till 1864, when he came to live in Medford, and until 1880 his time was still pressed with other important work, but he did not forget the city's need of a park. In Medford, with his home on Pine Hill, and from its top rock a glimpse of the city and ocean, and on all other sides rocks, dells, hills, and the almost unbroken woods, another site, nearer Boston, richer and more varied in its wild pictures, and with a larger promise of a future forest, had revealed itself in the "Old Five Mile Woods," or Middlesex Fells. Loving nature and humanity, and knowing the interdependence of each with each, it is little wonder Mr. Wright should very soon have made himself master of the extent and resources of this great waste and wasted region, or that he should have seen in it the grandest possible future park for Boston, or later should have made its cause his own.

Had the Fells been taken in the way he urged, we should have had under a wholly unitary control its entire natural

acreage, for by his law of 1882 nothing of the people's fresh air and other benefits went into the pockets of any man, and his plan, by stimulating public spirit in the Fells owners, and by taking all the land at one time, was as well secured against money greed as it is possible in the nature—or, rather, human nature—of things for a plan to be. But at first his hope for his object lay in the city government; and all undaunted—if he ever heard of it—by A. S. Hilliard's remark to H. W. S. Cleveland, who in 1857 urged on one occasion the same object, that "you might as well try to persuade the Common Council to buy land in the moon as the Fells," his first step was this very trial. No man of the city's executive, who could be persuaded to go, but was taken through the Fells, and there seconded by the multitudinous facts of its glorious predestination. Mr. Wright urged its claims to be secured at once. When Mr. De las Casas, of the present Park Board, in his historical sketch for the *New England Magazine* of 1898, says of Mr. Wright, "He was trained in his line of thought by association with the anti-slavery movement and by a residence in England, where he had watched the use of the common lands by the masses," he says truly, for the former had certainly taught him that until some determined man or leader of men, ready to wear the thorns, and let others take the laurels, has gone ahead to pave the way, the last thing the "masses" have anything to hope from is this mammon-ruled administration. Before it was possible to inoculate a single grain of anti-slavery manhood or abolition action into legislative halls anywhere, he and his anti-slavery co-workers had seen their petitions flung under legislative tables, their presidential candidates reviled, and earlier their homes mobbed, presses destroyed, and their most dispassionate arguments burned. But Mr. De las Casas does not speak truly when he says that Mr. Wright, in behalf of his Fells, "naturally enough began to agitate and seek the assistance of those with whom he had worked in the anti-slavery cause." The Fells cause and the cause of the slave were common causes and the interest of all, and he therefore invited the assistance of all; but it was only the money men and the politicians that he

sought—or had to seek; the men of soul came of their own accord, and, in so far as they were his anti-slavery co-workers, consisted of Theodore D. Weld, John G. Whittier, and Samuel E. Sewell. When Sylvester Baxter, in his "Boston Park Guide," said of what Mr. Wright's persistence had created, "The public sentiment aroused by this agitation finally led to the Metropolitan Park System," he was writing history, not politics.

The hearings before the City Council Committee took place in 1869. Of the General Court action, which in 1870 was the outcome of these hearings, Mr. Wright in his "Appeal" called "The Park Question," wrote: "The well-guarded Park bill of last year, which submitted the whole problem of the future beauty and grandeur of our city to a competent and impartial commission, was defeated in the interest of projectors who have manifest private ends to serve. Everybody has private ends; and the public is not about to forego its own ends lest somebody should be privately benefited by it. It ought and it will do the best it can for its whole self without injury to any individual, and if any individual is enriched by it, so much the better for him or her. Let us have fair play and no dog in the manger."

The report of the City Commission proved its impartiality, and the papers, of which there were a large number, were all strongly and ably in favor of a park or parks: but since the Fells was the only easily and cheaply accessible location then urged that had anything like the extent of territory, the woods, rocks, waters, and other requisites for the city's future beauty and grandeur, "Mt. Andrew Park" alone offered the city problem a solution; and in the later working out of the problem, no greater proof of the necessity of just such means as Mr. Wright employed could be had than lies in the legislative results of the meetings, which are in brief as follows:—

With a proviso seventeen, by which as a law it couldn't take effect without a two-thirds vote of the city's legal voters, the bill was passed, and by its failure to get the vote, defeated. This law, section 4, empowered Boston to locate her park or parks "in or near her city limits"; and in so doing closed the door in the face of the Fells and Blue Hills, Boston's only chance of the

park continuity and forest benefaction, so indispensable in every healthful and happy way to her growth, present and future.

From time to time Mr. Wright issued public invitations to the people at large to visit the Fells, offering himself to act as guide. He kept the subject alive through the papers, taking care to stimulate all the interest awakened, and before long a number of able writers had come to his aid.

His literary and mathematical powers at this epoch had so far got the better of his poverty that he was enabled during the years from 1870 to 1880 to purchase as his own contribution to the park some fifty or sixty acres of wild woods. During this ten years of effort for the Fells, in addition to labors which hardly gave him time to draw a long breath, Mr. Wright hoped that younger men, and men who, though wise and good, were not so strongly identified with unpopular good causes as to have incurred the enmity of the ruling mammon powers, would take the matter up. But no independent effort was made, and in 1880 he put his own wits to work. His hearing before the city council was twelve years later than the day of Mr. Cleveland's urging, and yet in 1880 Mr. Hilliard's governmental hopelessness must still have been true, for before the more practical Metropolitan movers ventured into the legislature, twenty-four more years had been added to the twelve. In 1880, then, the situation would seem to demand a measure by which, without further loss or delay, it would be practical for the people, if they wished, by their own effort and generosity, to secure their Fells for themselves, and which, should they fail in so doing, would by its co-operative, social, and educational character have overcome that stubborn governmental hopelessness. At any rate, Mr. Wright meant no effort on his own part should be wanting in furtherance of this two-fold aim. His plan proposed to secure the Fells by a two-thirds vote and appropriation from the municipalities, and to encourage this vote it called for a voluntary contribution sufficient to extinguish private titles, which at the appraised value of that date he found to aggregate about \$300,000. The contribution took the form of a pledge, the payment of which was conditional upon the vote being favorable. It was a contribution in which

he meant Boston to share in proportion to her benefits, if not her wealth. The Forestry Law, Chapter 255, which he caused to be passed in its behalf, vested the title of the Fells park in the commonwealth, and the park was to be held under unitary control, the Board of Agriculture acting as a Board of Forestry, in perpetuity for the benefit of the municipalities in which it was situated. It will be seen that, under this plan, there was not the same danger of defeat, or blocking to the wheels of its progress by the greed of owners, as there would have been had the Fells acreage not been wholly secured at the same time.

On October 15, 1880, Mr. Wright called together some 200 people, and on Bear Hill in the Stoneham Fells formed a small association to devise plans and to discuss the means of carrying out any one that might be agreed upon. Two plans were sketched, Mr. Wright's and that of Wilson Flagg, who, years before Mr. Wright's discovery, had pleaded the Fells cause and made his own unsuccessful appeal to the government in behalf of its salvation as a Forest Conservatory, a wild, natural garden for the indigenous fauna and flora, and for the purposes of science and natural history. Mr. Wright's plan might well be made to embrace this distinct and yet harmonious feature, and was the one adopted. During the next two months these able advocates had made such headway that the mass meeting held in Medford January 1, 1881, was crowded and addressed by speakers who, having just returned from a smart drive through the Fells, were strong for action in its favor. 1881 later on was the year of the Ravine woods desecration, and this disastrous destruction Mr. Wright tried hard to prevent, but the proprietor of the woods, in an attempt to take advantage of his public spirit for the Fells, charged a price evidently beyond what could be hoped for from any other source, and far beyond Mr. Wright's ability to pay, or in the prescribed time—although he and one other of his associates were ready with \$1,000 from their own pockets—to get subscribed.

A tree with Mr. Wright was something almost human and wholly divine, and in no other part of his Fells had God blessed a spot with trees older and grander than in the Ravine woods.

"Possibly," he writes in an appeal of 1884, "those health-giving trees were destined to be sacrificed to save their race. If Boston could see them as they lie there, tears would flow, if not dollars." And he determined it should be no fault of his if they did not at least prove the saviours of their own little Fells brotherhood. By 1882 he had obtained in his Forestry Law all the legislation necessary to his plan and the taking of lands in behalf of forests anywhere in Massachusetts, and had enlisted a competent board of trustees to take charge of the conditional obligations. This done, the object of his labors was to direct as broad a public attention as possible to the fact that a way was now open to secure the Fells, the practical success of which lay within the power of the people themselves. This he did through the press, by the strength and argument, science, wit, earnestness, and frequency of his appeals, and socially, by a series of yearly "Forest Festivals," held in different parts of his Fells, that the able speaking which it was his care to procure might be supplemented by its different attractions, and that his trees, "most eloquent in the golden silence of their sunlit branches," might still help to plead his cause and their own.

The Fells as a park, glorious among the parks of nations, made appeal quite as strong to the ambition of the wealthy as to philanthropy and public spirit: and although little outside his own personal influencing was achieved toward the indispensable voluntary pledge, the spring of 1883 had hardly begun before Mr. Wright's words of March 17, "Everybody seems to be enthusiastically in favor of having the thing done—at the expense of somebody else," had become literally the truth. In other words, the popularity, including the favor of wealth so indispensable to administrative action, of the Fells cause, or park cause, had become an established fact. How well established I have some reason to know, for, hoping to help a little myself, as well as to save Mr. Wright some of the many little expenses which he so constantly and gladly met out of his own purse, I undertook to conduct an entertainment in each of the Fells municipalities and in Boston. And, in seeking the co-operation of other ladies, of the sixty or seventy calls I made, most of them

at the palaces, city or country, not a door was closed against me. The words "For the Fells" on my card was "open sesame" enough, and I left no house, rich or poor, without its "Godspeed" to Mr. Wright, in the great and good end he was so nobly struggling to gain. Quite a number, too, with whom I corresponded responded with voluntary contributions of their own, and all took hold with right good will in selling the tickets.

Finding the old saying, "What's everybody's business is nobody's," too unkindly true in his case, in 1884 he determined his plan should have the benefit of canvassers, and his next step was to begin himself the work of organizing "public domain clubs" in the Fells municipalities and in Boston, which, acting in concert with the Fells Association, might elect committees and employ them. Such a club, comprising some 200 members, he organized in Medford; and it only needed that some ten or twenty others as enterprising and as willing to work should, without his aid or prompting, effect the other organizations. Such help was not forthcoming; and his last Forest Festival, held, I think, in 1885, the year of his death, had for its object so to strengthen his little Fells Association as to help him in gaining this help. In 1885, too, by his invitation, the National Forestry Congress was held in Boston. Towards its success, and still that of similar forest parks for other cities, he made every effort. This was in September, and feeling his strength lessen, his work till the morning of his death was to see such men as he hoped after it might take his place. And on November 21 he died, bequeathing to the Metropolitan plan the success his own had earned, and with it, through the love of his children, the beautiful woods of Pine Hill and its neighborhood.

After quoting the passage which I have given, and which was written in the July of 1883, Mr. De las Casas takes leave of Mr. Wright with, "His death was thought to have been hastened by overwork in this cause, and to be an irreparable loss to the whole movement. The agitation became more energetic when real estate speculators bought the woods along Ravine road, cut off the grand pines, and turned the scene of beauty into the hideousness of a logging camp. The Appalachian Club took up the

matter, and April 2, 1890, appointed Charles Elliot, George C. Mann, and Rosewell B. Lawrence to arrange for a meeting of all persons interested in the preservation of scenery and historical sites in Massachusetts." And this meeting, according to Mr. De las Casas, by a sequence of other efforts and events, resulted in the Metropolitan Park law of 1893. Mr. Wright was a member of the Appalachian Club, and somewhere between 1881 and 1885 he had the pleasure of escorting a very large portion of the membership through the Fells, and in 1884, the year he was trying to get organized help on his subscription, such as they as a club had the power to give, he lectured before one of the meetings on "The Functions of a Forest." Mr. Wright was not only open to conviction, as his record would show, but was as magnanimous as he was generous, and although the approval given his plan by many of the club had done much to encourage both his work for it and his hope for aid in that most important contribution, had the meeting in behalf of another been called while he was alive, he would have rejoiced. The magnificent and broadly beneficial Metropolitan idea, including as it did both his Fells and Blue Hills, would have made him supremely happy, and its carrying out, whatever the means, so long as they were honest, would have had his heartiest co-operation.

Rosewell B. Lawrence, secretary of the Appalachian Club, publishes the following from the pen of T. W. Higginson in his pamphlet, "The Middlesex Fells," of 1886, which was delivered before the club after Mr. Wright's death: "We miss from among us the face of that devoted friend of all outdoor exploration, Elizur Wright. I have known him almost all my life; first as the fearless ally, and at times the equally fearless critic of William Lloyd Garrison; then as the translator of La Fontaine's Fables,—a task for which he seemed fitted by something French in his temperament, a certain mixture of fire and bonhomie, which lasted to the end of his days; then as a zealous petitioner before the legislature to remove the lingering disabilities of atheists; and then as the eager, hopeful, patient, unconquerable advocate of the scheme for setting apart the Middlesex Fells as a forest park. I served with him for a time on a committee for

that seemingly hopeless object, and shall never forget the inexhaustible faith with which he urged it. In his presence it was almost impossible not to believe in its speedy success; all obstacles seemed little before his sanguine confidence. Scarcely any one was ever present at these committee meetings except the three old men in whom the whole enterprise appeared to centre, Wilson Flagg, John Owen, and Elizur Wright. They were all of patriarchal aspect; as they sat leaning toward each other, with long, grey locks flowing, I always felt as if I was admitted to some weird council of old Greek gods, displaced and belated, not yet quite convinced that Pan was dead, and planning together to save the last remnant of the forest they loved." That Mr. Wright was enthusiastic to a greater degree than most men with large reasoning powers is not to be denied. I could quote many passages from his pen which in the light of to-day's events read as a prophecy.

To the motion of Philip Chase it is due that the Wright homestead, with the care and use of the immediately surrounding land, is allowed to remain in the family during my own, its former owner's, life. It is an affectional privilege which I dearly appreciate, and in token thereof, the public are as welcome on my grounds as in any other part of the park, and it is my effort to keep these grounds free from all that is unsightly, and as wild and beautiful as possible. Should visitors hurt my trees or throw banana skins and salmon cans on my grass, I should cry, "Janet, donkeys!" but otherwise the place will never be more theirs than it is while I live. It was also the vote of the Board to make a fair allowance in my favor for loss occasioned by the delay in our settlement; but as there hadn't been any loss, and my wish was to keep to my own terms, it was again, on Mr. Chase's motion, decided that the money should go toward the erection of a little stone structure on Pine Hill in honor of Mr. Wright. The motion, in the contribution of such money as remained in its treasury, was seconded by Mr. Wright's Medford Public Domain Club of 1884; and as Mr. Wright did not let the stones of his Fells cry out in vain, it is fitting, but it is not necessary. To him the stones and all else cried, "Save the woods"; and, thanks to the

Metropolitan share in so doing, the sort of column Mr. Wright would best have liked is already in progress. In the words of his old friend Whittier to another unselfish worker for humanity, there are "grateful hearts instead of marble shaping his viewless monument." That any part of his share in this gratitude should be given to others would not in the least have troubled him. Indeed, could he be assured that its inspiration would always remain still the wild Fells forest, he would gladly pluck the last laurel from his own brow, and himself place it wherever it might be thought best for the good of the cause to have it.

GUY C. HAWKINS PAPERS.—NUMBER 2.

[Sketches of some of the reasons which may be adduced before a committee of the Legislature in favor of a separation of the town of Charlestown.]

This appeal of the petitioners to the Legislature for a separation from the town of Charlestown is made to you under peculiar circumstances and from more than ordinary reasons. Not only do we contend that the territory is sufficient for two towns, and that as a matter of convenience it is highly expedient, but we do complain of a variety of oppressive grievances, of unjust and unequal burthens. I would have it distinctly understood, however, that, although we do insist on these considerations as our most important reasons for a division, yet we do not implicate the town or charge its officers with partiality. As individuals, as a municipal community, they have our most unlimited confidence and respect. This inequality is in the nature of things; it grows out of the unnatural connection of the two sections, nor can it be remedied but by a separation. We shall endeavor, first, to convince the committee that the territory and population is sufficient for two towns, and that as a matter of convenience the measure is expedient, and shall then proceed to state some of the reasons connected with this subject, growing out of our peculiar situation, and developing facts in which we, the petitioners, are deeply interested.

The town of Charlestown is an irregular figure nearly or quite nine miles long, with a very unequal breadth, containing in 1820 somewhat short of 7,000 inhabitants. Seven-eighths of this population is confined within the limits of the peninsula, a territory short of two miles in length, and this is connected with the country part of the town by an isthmus or narrow neck of land. There is the contemplated division of the two sections. The publick buildings and offices are all located at the extremity of the peninsula, and the inconvenience of this to the western section must be apparent to every one. The number of inhabitants in this section will not vary much from 1,000, and although the

number is small in comparison with the territory, yet when we consider its vicinity to Boston, its other natural and local advantages, this I think cannot be considered as an objection. The extent and singular form of this town running seven miles into the country, and almost encircled by four other townships, whilst the principal part of the population are confined to the eastern extremity, cannot, we think, but impress every mind with the necessity of a division.

But these are considerations of but little importance in the eye of your petitioners, in comparison with others, the consequence of this unnatural connection in which our interests are deeply involved. We contend and we expect to prove to the satisfaction of the committee that we pay into the town treasury a much larger amount than is expended upon us. This is not idle assertion grounded on loose conjecture, the rantings of a heated imagination, but a truth which we conceive to be incontrovertible. By the assessors' books of 1823, the amount of taxes in the westerly section amounted to a fraction over \$3,500. The expenditures in the same section during the same year (according to the printed account and other authentic sources) amounted to somewhat short of \$1,100. This, the committee will discover, is not one-third part of the amount paid in, but we are aware that there are some other expenditures, such as our proportional part of the salaries of town officers and support of poor, which ought to be taken into this account, but after everything is included which the most scrupulous could suggest, we are confident the result will be decidedly in our favor. So sure are we of this that we challenge our opponents to prove the contrary. Nor do we admit that we are contending for a trifle, for although we do not pretend that we can accurately ascertain the precise sum which we shall save by this change, yet we are sanguine it will not amount to less than from one-third to one-half of our present burthens. As this is an important point to sustain, I shall proceed to state some of the causes which produce this inequality. The two sections are altogether different in their occupations, views, and habits—the one is a seaport, the other an agricultural community: the one by its contiguity with Boston imitates the

expenditures of the city, the other, more frugal in their habits, disclaims all such rivalry; the one has sources of expenditure peculiar to itself, the other participates only in a few of their mutual wants; perhaps it would not be an exaggeration to say that one-fourth of our annual expenditures are devoted to objects in which we have no particular interest. Some items of these expenditures which occur yearly are night watch, lighting lamps, repair of pumps and fire engines, and those which occasionally occur, the purchase of such articles and a variety of expences to improve and ornament the peninsula. But this is not all. Apparent as it must be to every mind, from the causes just mentioned, that we are disadvantageously situated in reference to the peninsula, another view of the subject will show that on another point we are suffering by this connection. We of the westerly section do not pretend to compete with the eastern in point of wealth, yet even on this subject what says the tax book? We pay one-sixth part of the burthens and yet contain not one-eighth part of the population. How can this be, if the easterly section is the most wealthy, without impeaching the integrity of the assessors? It is simply this, our property is seen and tangible, theirs unseen and therefore difficult to be traced. We are taxed not only for what we own, but what we have in possession; they from the nature of their property frequently are not taxed to the extent of their wealth. Under these circumstances, I expect the committee will be surprised, will be astonished that the inhabitants of the westerly section have not long since appeared at the bar of the Legislature to make known their grievances and to vindicate their rights. This is to be attributed to a variety of causes, some of which are the smallness of our numbers, scattered population, local attachments and prejudices. Some of these inequalities are so palpable and apparent that they have long been felt and acknowledged by all; others are of such a nature as to require investigation, but are equally oppressive. I will now draw the attention of the committee to the particular interests which are conflicting, and leave it to the candor of all to decide whether the suffering party has not the highest claims on the Legislature, not only for support and redress, but for

patronage and favor. Agriculture or the cultivation of the soil has ever been considered in all ages and in all countries as the grand support and pillar of all governments; it is the aliment on which all the other classes depend and without which the ligaments of civilized society would fall asunder and man revert back again to his original barbarism. In a government constituted like ours, where the rights of man are fully recognized, based on the principles of equality, it exhibits itself in another amiable point of view. Its gains being slow but sure if attended with industry and frugality, it keeps up that equality which the constitution recognizes, and which is the beau ideal of theorists. In this point of view it may be considered as the safeguard of America and the bulwark of liberty. The commercial and manufacturing interests which we contend (in reference to our little community) are preying upon the vitals of their common father, in a national point of view are doubtless deserving the patronage and protection of government, but no one, I presume, will contend that these interests are more important than that of agriculture. In fact, wherever there is a conflict of interests in a municipal community, it is idle to pretend that one part of the community should be taxed for the support of the establishments of the other. This is so inconsistent in itself, so palpably absurd and unjust that few are to be found who would not be ashamed to avow such a principle, yet to what other cause can we attribute the present opposition to this measure from within the peninsula? I know they would endeavor to have a pretense because we are not united to a man in our own section. But has this any weight? What right have they to interfere in a question of interest which relates to ourselves? We expect satisfactorily to prove to the committee that this opposition is more in sound than reality; that more than four-fifths of the landed property and three-fourths of the taxable property are on the side of the petitioners. But admitting it was not so, admitting that we were equally divided upon this subject amongst ourselves, is it for the town of Charlestown to decide which of the two parties are the most disinterested and which the most selfish? But what course has the town pursued on this subject? In the first instance, they

agreed to a separation provided the line of demarkation and the terms and conditions could be settled between the parties. In accordance with this vote, a committee was chosen to confer with a committee of the petitioners to settle these points and to report to the town. After a laborious investigation, the parties agreed, and a report was made. The town then, without making any substantial objections to those terms, rejected the report and instructed their representatives to oppose a separation on any terms whatever. I now ask, Where is the consistency, where the sincerity of the town in the course they have pursued? If they were determined to oppose us, why did they not take that stand at first, and not have added insincerity to opposition? For as the affair has terminated, can we believe otherwise than that they intended to play upon the credulity of the petitioners? That they intended that they should give them a pretense for opposition when they were already from pecuniary motives predisposed to oppose them? Since the town has shown no substantial reasons why they oppose a separation, we cannot but attribute it to an admission of one of the committee who had thoroughly investigated the subject, namely, that the westerly section pays into the town treasury annually \$2,000 more than is expended upon them, which goes to support the general municipal concerns of the town. Whether an argument of this kind ought to have any weight upon this question, I leave it to the good sense of the committee to decide. I shall now endeavor to develop some of the motives which actuate the remonstrants upon this subject. In our opinion, the opposition from this quarter can be traced to a particular point,—two individuals who have long enjoyed (we think from courtesy) certain privileges on a fishing stream are, we think, the backbone of the remonstrants. We do not pretend to say that all who are upon the remonstrance are influenced by these men, but we do contend, and we think truly, had it not been for this fishing stream, the remonstrance upon your table would not have been presented to the Legislature. These individuals, one of which, by the various offices he sustains in the town and his long being a member of the Legislature, has scattered his crude and one-sided opinions far and

wide. He has not seemed to hesitate at anything that would further his object. Not only has he roused local prejudices and presented bugbears to the weak, to influence their opinions, but he has made the grossest misrepresentations and descended to the meanest personalities. His course has been that of a factious demagogue engrossed by his own personal views of avarice and ambition. At his heels he has carried a train of kindred or dependants, who have yielded to his influence or dread his power. The question then reverts, Shall an insignificant faction thus organized, grounded on ambition and selfishness, defeat an object of general utility, defeat the declared will of a suffering community who have made known their grievances and ask relief?

“If it be possible, live peaceably with all men.” It is a peculiar characteristic of the Christian religion that it discourages a spirit of conquest in nations and in rulers, and in private life inculcates the milder virtues of humility and forbearance. This opposition to the darling inclinations of the human heart is the highest possible proof that it had not its origin in human wisdom or human power. Man is a restless, ambitious being, delighting in a succession of untried adventures, covetous of power, and eager in the pursuit of glory. Whatever has a tendency to raise him above his fellows stimulates his exertions and presses him forward in his ambitious career. In his course he is too apt to pass by the unobtrusive virtues and sacrifice all to the love of splendor and vain glory. It is the part of Christianity to chasten and allay these turbulent passions, to encourage a quiet spirit, and to place our happiness in temperance, cheerfulness, and humility. “If it be possible, live peaceably with all men.” If it be possible. Here, even, our great exemplar did not inculcate as a duty an entire spirit of non-resistance; neither would I. As the world is, it is at times justifiable as a community and as individuals to resist oppression and to assert our rights.

CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1825.

By Frank Mortimer Hawes

(Continued.)

1828-1829.

The affairs of wards 3 and 6 were assigned to Robert G. Tenney, and of wards 4 and 5 to Luke Wyman. Miss Whittemore was appointed to school No. 4, Miss Stearns to No. 5, Miss Ward to No. 3, and Miss Gerrish to No. 6, all for the summer term. For the winter term, Philemon R. Russell, Jr., was engaged to teach in ward 4, Samuel Pitts in ward 5, Joseph W. Jenks in ward 3, and Francis S. Eastman in ward 6. As the last-named did not accept, C. C. King was secured in his place. The report for the year says there were about 200 scholars outside the Neck, that schools No. 3 and 6 had ten and one-half months of school, the other two schools nine months.

Of bills approved, Lemuel Gulliver received \$125; Eliza D. Ward, \$88; Miss Gerrish, \$88; Miss M. Whittemore, \$71.50; Miss Maria H. Stearns, \$65; Philemon R. Russell, Jr., \$120; Mr. Pitts, \$98; and C. C. King, \$160.

Within the Neck, at the examinations, 1,035 were present out of an enrollment of 1,235. Two additional primary schools have been started, making ten in all. Another may be needed in the near future. "The trustees now have two primary school-houses on the training field lot, all on the town's land, and connected with the larger school establishment." We may infer that the other eight primary schools were held in rooms leased for the purpose, except, perhaps, the one at the Neck, which was probably in the (brick) schoolhouse there.

The trustees recommend that children remain in school till fifteen years of age rather than fourteen, as heretofore. The report, which is signed by Chester Adams, secretary, in closing says: "The children never appeared to the trustees so deserving of commendation as at the present time."

1829-1830.

From the report of Rev. Henry Jackson, secretary of the Board of Trustees for this year, we learn the following facts (concerning Charlestown school affairs):—

The schools without the peninsula were taught from nine to

eleven months each. At the examination of the primary schools (within the peninsula) 486 children were present out of a total of 580. The first two classes of the grammar schools were publicly examined in the Town Hall, by a special vote of the trustees. "It is believed that an annual examination of this character would be exceedingly beneficial and would excite in no small degree a deeper interest in the public schools." Four hundred and eighty-seven pupils were present, although the rolls exhibit 641 names. There are now ten primary and five grammar and writing schools within the Neck, and four common schools beyond the peninsula, making nineteen schools supported at the public expense, and comprising 1,432 children. All the schools show a fearful list of absences; thus nearly one-fourth of the good effect "is suffered to pass away."

Seven thousand dollars is asked for next year, and as "the brick school at the Neck is suffering for want of immediate repairs, an additional appropriation of \$400" is asked for that purpose.

"Several citizens in the village beyond the canal bridge make a request that the school boundaries in that part of the town be so altered as to admit their children to attend the school at the Neck. It will be recollected that the present boundaries were established several years since, at the time when the Winter Hill schoolhouse was built in consequence of their special application."

It is voted to retain the children in school until the age of fifteen.

The trustees' records give as additional information for this year the fact that the school districts were re-numbered, that at Winter Hill being known henceforth as No. 4, that at Milk Row as No. 5, the one in the Alewife Brook neighborhood as No. 6, and the one at the extremity of the town as No. 7. Mr. Tenney had the care of No. 4 and No. 5; Mr. Wyman of No. 6 and No. 7.

The summer schools were examined Wednesday, October 14, and the teachers, according to this numbering, were Miss Mary Dodge, Miss Catherine Blanchard, Miss M. Whittemore, and Miss Maria A. Stearns. The two former received \$112, the two latter \$78.

The male teachers for the winter schools in these four districts were: Joseph S. Hastings, of Shrewsbury, for the "Woburn Road school"; P. R. Russell, Jr., for the "West Cambridge Road school"; William Sawyer, Jr., for Winter Hill; and Henry C. Allen, of Bridgewater, for Milk Row. All were to begin the first Monday in December. Lewis Colby, "of Cambridge College," seems to have taken Mr. Hastings' place for a few weeks. January 18, 1830, "Mr. Allen requested to be relieved from further services on account of some unpleasant circumstances having occurred from want of suitable discipline in his school." His resignation was accepted, and Lewis Colby, "a member of the Cambridge school," was put in charge.

From bills approved we learn that Mr. Allen received \$51.68; Mr. Hastings, \$98; Mr. Russell, \$120; Mr. Colby, \$76.40; and Mr. Sawyer, \$124. At the examination of No. 7, Messrs. Wyman and Jackson reported that Mr. Hastings had taught the school with much ability, and they were highly gratified. No. 6 was also commended by the examiners, Messrs. Wyman and Walker. Mr. Colby's school was examined by Chester Adams. Forty-eight were present out of a total of seventy-four. "This school has given the trustees much anxiety, but since it was under the present management it has improved, and appeared well at the examination." Captain Tenney examined No. 4 (Winter Hill). Thirty-five were present out of the fifty-two enrolled. "The captain did not commend the teacher or the school."

The Trustees (continued from Volume IV., page 90).

1830, Rev. James Walker, Rev. Linus S. Everett, Chester Adams (president), Paul Willard, Esq. (treasurer), Benjamin Thompson, Guy C. Hawkins, John Runey.

1831, the same, except that Mr. Walker was succeeded by James K. Frothingham.

1832, Paul Willard, Esq., Benjamin Thompson (secretary), Guy C. Hawkins, John Runey, James K. Frothingham (president), Henry Jaques, Joseph F. Tufts.

1833, James K. Frothingham (president), Benjamin Thompson (secretary), Paul Willard, Esq. (treasurer), Guy C. Hawkins, Joseph F. Tufts, Charles Thompson, Chester Adams.

1834, the same.

1835, Charles Thompson (treasurer), Paul Willard (secretary), Amos Hazeltine, Joseph F. Tufts, Captain Larkin Turner (president), John Stevens, Alfred Allen.

1836, Charles Thompson (president), J.W. Valentine, M. D., George W. Warren (treasurer), Alfred Allen, James Underwood, Charles Forster, Thomas Browne, Jr. (secretary).

1837, the same.

1838, Richard Frothingham, Jr., Charles Forster, Alfred Allen, Thomas Browne, Jr., George W. Warren, James Underwood, Eliah P. Mackintire.

1839, the same, except that John Sanborn succeeds Mr. Mackintire.

1840, Richard Frothingham, Jr. (president). George W. Warren, Charles Forster, John Sanborn, Eliah P. Mackintire (treasurer), Frederick Robinson (secretary), Francis Bowman.

1841, John C. Magoun, M. F. Haley, Philander Ames, Alfred Allen, Frederick Robinson, Richard Frothingham, Jr., E. P. Mackintire, Charles Forster, John Sanborn, Francis Bowman, George W. Tyler (?).

1830-1831.

The (summer) schools beyond the Neck were kept six months, beginning with the third Monday in April. Miss Abigail Bradley (No. 4) and Miss Sarah A. Mead (No. 5) received \$16 per month, and Miss Miranda Whittemore (No. 6) and Miss Phebe W. Wiley (No. 7) received \$13 per month. Before the end of the term Miss Wiley was succeeded by Miss Mary Dodge.

John Runey and Guy C. Hawkins had charge of the outside schools, and were empowered to take a school census in wards 4 and 5. Later they report seventy-six scholars in the former and 109 in the latter, between the ages of four and fifteen. "The committee appointed to consider the subject of holidays allowed the schools report that, in their opinion, the weekly occurrence of the same is injurious to the order and progress of the schools, tending to dissipate the minds of the scholars and unfit them for much effort immediately after. This evil is considered as particularly attending the Wednesday holiday, the influence of the

Sabbath having a tendency to counteract the effects of the recess on Saturday. The committee would therefore recommend that the afternoon of Wednesday be no longer allowed as a holiday."

Holidays: Every Saturday afternoon, election week, Commencement week, the week including Thanksgiving, the week including the annual meeting of the American Institute of Instruction, Christmas Day, Fast Day, the first Monday of June, the Seventeenth of June, the Fourth of July, and the day next after the semi-annual visitations.

"The committee are aware that considerable abridgment is made of the time heretofore granted to the teachers, but when they consider that but six hours' service is required of them daily in school, and that by this arrangement they would still have more than nine weeks annually which might be devoted to relaxation and exercise, they cannot believe that the health of teachers or scholars would be hazarded by too close an application to their duties."

The winter terms for the schools beyond the Neck began the second Monday in November. The following were the teachers appointed: James Swan, for the "Russell district"; Jeremiah Sanborn, for Milk Row; Ebenezer Smith, Jr., for the "Gardner district"; and Moses W. Walker, Winter Hill. Before the end of the term, Mr. Smith had been succeeded by L. W. Stanton, and George W. Brown had charge for two months at Winter Hill. The schools at No. 4 and No. 5 are now allowed to be kept through the entire year. Messrs. Runey and Hawkins are empowered to make such arrangements as may be thought best in regard to the stove and chimney in the Winter Hill schoolhouse. They are also appointed to supply the out-lying schools with wood.

A committee appointed to examine the schoolhouse in Milk Row reported that repairs were necessary. It was left to Messrs. Hawkins and Thompson to make the same. April 25, 1831, John Sweetser was paid \$64.62 for these repairs.

The subject of permitting the children immediately beyond the Canal bridge to attend the school at the Neck having been submitted to the trustees, they have to report nothing yet done about it. It is believed that about sixty children would be better

accommodated if allowed to attend that school, agreeable to the wishes of their parents. If so, an additional teacher there would be required, and it would necessitate the removal of the Winter Hill schoolhouse to a different location." The matter was left on the table.

"The repairs at the Neck schoolhouse went beyond the appropriation, \$150. As is often the case in repairing old buildings, many things were necessary to be done that could not be discovered earlier in the work."

Within the Neck there are ten primary schools, with the scholars ranging from four to eight years of age, and averaging sixty-three in each school.

Early in the spring of 1831 L. Gulliver resigned as writing teacher at the Town Hill school, and Reuben Swan succeeded him. About the same time Mr. Conant, at the Training Field school, was followed by Amos Barker. The other male teachers on the peninsula at this time were Messrs. Fairbanks, Peirce, and Samuel Bigelow, the latter being the master at the Neck school. March 28, "Voted to expel John H——d from Mr. Bigelow's school for bad conduct." The same day a report relative to the establishment of a high school was read by Chester Adams, Esq., and after amendment was adopted.

1831-1832.

The teachers for the summer term without the Neck, to begin April 1, 1831, were: Miss Catherine Blanchard, at Milk Row, who was to receive \$16 per month; Miss Abby Mead, of Woburn, at Winter Hill; Miss Whittemore, for the Russell district; and Miss Mary W. Jeffurds, for the Gardner district. The teachers for the winter term, with \$32 a month at No. 4 and No. 5, \$30 at No. 6, and \$28 at No. 7, were Moses W. Walker, John N. Sherman, S. N. Cooke, and E. W. Sanborn, respectively.

The trustees vote to hold their meetings "the last Monday evening of each month, as usual."

Mr. Frothingham is authorized, July 25, to commence prosecution against boys for engaging in breaking the glass in the Neck schoolhouse.

October 4 it is recorded that smallpox has appeared in town and threatens to spread in some of the primary departments. Consequently it is voted that no scholar be allowed to attend any of the public schools after to-morrow who has not been vaccinated. This order was rescinded December 26.

Voted that Election vacation stand as formerly, viz., the last week in May and the first Monday in June. Miss Gates and Miss Jaquith, of the primary teachers, resigned this year. February 2, 1832, the resignation of Samuel Bigelow, of the Neck school, was accepted, also that of Reuben Swan, of the Female Writing school, both having entered other occupations. The salary of the former was \$600, of the latter \$500. Moses W. Walker, of the Winter Hill school, was elected to the Neck school, and Thomas Stephenson to succeed Mr. Swan. As Mr. Stephenson's health was delicate, after two months he was succeeded by James Swan at the same salary, \$500.

At the close of the season, on the recommendation of Mr. Hawkins, the services of John N. Sherman were retained at Milk Row at \$360 per year. This is the first instance of a teacher on Somerville soil being hired by the year. "The trustees, by this action incur the additional expense of \$72 for meeting the wishes of the people at Milk Row." It was voted at that time, April 9, 1832, that a uniform system of writing be introduced into all the schools as soon as possible, and that the secretary supply the schools with a sufficient number of Boston Slips for this purpose. At the end of the year the Board extended thanks to Chester Adams, Esq., who resigns his office, commendatory of his long term of service. It was also voted that boys beyond Canal bridge within the Winter Hill district from ten to fifteen be allowed to attend Mr. Walker's school at the Neck until the trustees otherwise order. All such boys must call on Mr. Runey and get a permit from him. The schools now number 1,450 pupils, and the annual cost of educating them is about \$5 per pupil. The school for boys is under Messrs. Peirce and Baker; that of the girls under Messrs. Fairbanks and James Swan.

(To be continued.)

Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society.

Somerville, Mass.

October, 1906

Vol. V

No. 3

CONTENTS.

| | PAGE |
|---|------|
| SOME OLD TREES—NUMBER 2 Sara A. Stone | 53 |
| SOMERVILLE | 65 |
| CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1825 Frank Mortimer Hawes | 67 |

HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

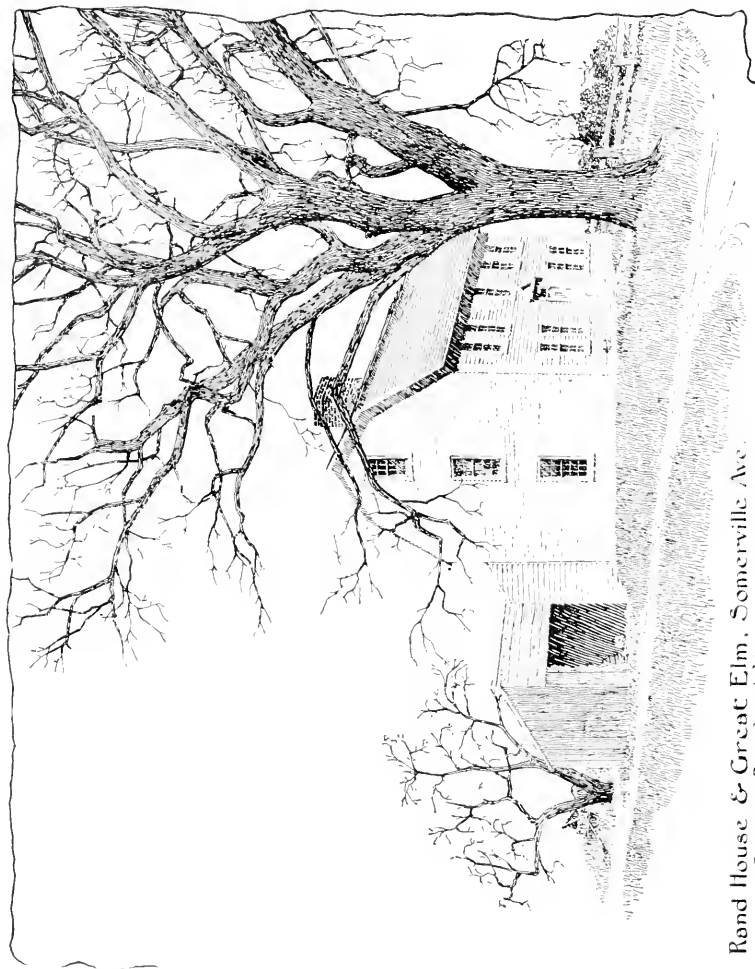
For sale at 19 Central Street. Exchange list in charge of the Librarian and
Curator Alfred Morton Cutler, 234 Medford Street, to whom all
communications regarding exchanges should be addressed.

PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL C. EARLE



Rand House & Great Elm, Somerville Ave.
OPPOSITE PARK ST

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. V.

OCTOBER, 1906

No. 3

SOME OLD TREES.—NUMBER 2

By Sara A. Stone*

(Read before the Somerville Historical Society November 7, 1906.)

Have we any old trees in Somerville? Yes, a goodly number. It is difficult to find out the exact facts in many cases, but, counting individual trees, there are over forty which are at least 125 years old, and some of them must be older. Half of the number are red cedars, which may be found in West Somerville and in the neighborhood of Albion street, the location which was formerly known as "Polly Swamp." They look worn and dusty beside the fresh foliage of the deciduous trees, and bring to mind the lines of Dr. Holmes:—

"Little of all we value here
Wakes on the morn of its hundredth year
Without both looking and feeling queer."

No doubt they are more than a hundred years old. Many of them are remembered by old residents in other parts of the city. One remembers them at the corner of Highland avenue and Walnut street, and adds, "They were considered a natural growth."

*The following persons have aided the writer of this paper by suggestions and information: Mr. John F. Ayer, Mrs. Ellen P. Angier, Mr. George L. Baxter, Mr. Josiah Q. Bennett, Mrs. Martha E. Bowman, Miss Alice I. Bradford, Mr. George C. Brackett, Mrs. Hannah C. Brown, Mr. Joseph H. Clark, Mr. Richard E. Cutter, Mrs. Mary J. Davis, Mrs. L. W. Dow, Miss Frances Dow, Mrs. Helen F. Edlefson, Mr. Charles D. Elliot, Mrs. Annie L. Fletcher, Mr. Ellsworth Fisk, Mr. N. E. Fitz, Hon. William H. Furber, Mrs. Martha J. H. Gerry, Mr. Albert L. Haskell, Mr. Frank M. Hawes, Mrs. Helen E. Heald, Mrs. C. E. Henderson, Miss Bertha E. Holden, Mrs. Fannie C. Jaques, Mr. A. M. Kidder, Mr. George A. Kimball, Mrs. Eleanor G. Kirkpatrick, Miss Georgia Lears, Mrs. Martha E. Libby, Mr. Jairus Mann, Mr. David L. Maulsby, Mr. Henry C. Rand, Hon. Francis H. Raymond, Mrs. Raymond, Mr. Edwin F. Read, Mr. Aaron Sargent, Miss Ellen M. Sawyer, Miss Margaret A. Simpson, Mrs. Juliet G. Smith, Miss Susan S. Stetson, Rev. Anson Titus, Miss M. Alice Tufts, Miss Martha Tufts, Mr. Timothy Tufts, Miss Louise A. Vinal, Miss Anna P. Vinal, Miss Edith A. Woodman.

A few trees, mostly elms, were silent witnesses of the events of the Revolution which took place on Somerville soil. Many, not now standing, overshadowed old homesteads which have long since been demolished, whose inmates left honored names. Here and there an apple or pear tree, or remains of an orchard, testify to the thrift of former days. This may have been prophetic of the saying of this generation, that "Somerville is a city of homes." Nowadays, however, few bridegrooms have an opportunity to plant a tree in honor of the bride.

It is said that in the early days these hills were wooded. A military map of 1775 is generously sprinkled over with marks meant to represent trees, indicating a wooded country. Another fact would bear out the assertion. The soldiers encamped here during the Revolution cut down so many trees, in their desperate efforts to be comfortable, that the inhabitants protested. This fact and the lapse of time would make it highly improbable that even a single tree of the original woods is standing to-day. It would be safe to say that, with a few exceptions hereafter to be mentioned, all our trees have grown since the Revolution.

Many will remember the beautiful trees which bordered the drive into the McLean Asylum grounds. These probably dated back to the time of Joseph Barrell, who sold the estate for a retreat for the insane in 1816.

On Washington street, below the railroad bridge, there stood a row of elms of handsome proportions, which were sacrificed when that thoroughfare was widened in 1873-4. Before that time the car track was located next the sidewalk, and the elms were between it and the roadway.

Above the bridge, near the corner of Medford street, once grew a tree of a very rare species for this part of the country, an English walnut. It was planted by a member of the Tufts family, and yielded many bushels of nuts in its day.

Further on, in front of the Ives Hill house, was a Revolutionary elm, and in front of the Pope schoolhouse were three more. Here James Miller, "too old to run," was shot down by the British on their return from Lexington.

On the opposite side of the street, in a lot in the rear, is a pear tree, with a trunk more than a foot in diameter, which is in

the neighborhood of a hundred years old. It stood on the Shedd estate when a portion of it was purchased by Andrew Kidder eighty years ago.

A very large elm stands in the yard of the old Prospect Hill schoolhouse, near the foot of Bonner avenue, which is eighty or a hundred years old.

In a picture on the cover of the Somerville Journal Souvenir, published in 1901, is represented a tree of advanced age standing at the corner of Sanborn's grocery store in Union square, with a pump and drinking trough in front of it.

Two button-wood trees once grew in front of the house in Union square which was moved to make way for Pythian block. This spot was once part of the homestead of the Stone family. A few rods in from the square stood a very old pear tree and a few apple trees, doubtless part of an orchard.

Until a few years ago, back on the hill, on Columbus avenue, was a button-pear tree, said to have been over a hundred years old when it was cut down. Could it have been one of those pear trees mentioned by Miss Vinal in "The Flora of Somerville," which were believed to have grown from seeds scattered by the soldiers encamped on Prospect Hill during the Revolution? A pear tree is left among the shrubbery set out around the base of Prospect Hill park. This may be a descendant of those pear trees, which, together with locusts and red cedars, were common here a few years ago.

A group of willows and a fine button-wood tree once grew near the foot of Walnut street. A row of pear trees, with an apple orchard behind, extended from Walnut street to the Hawkins house on Bow street, where the Methodist church now is. A row of tall trees bordered each side of the walk to the house, one of them a thorn, a tree considered a rarity then. Two immense willows remained in recent years. Two large elms overshadowed the old Hawkins house on Washington street, near the railroad bridge.

The cemetery on Somerville avenue, the land for which was given by Samuel Tufts in 1804, has many interests. In it are two large willows, their trunks in an advanced stage of decay, and half their tops cut off, from the effects of an ice-storm five

or six years ago. A schoolhouse, called the Milk Row school, once stood on the front easterly corner, and it is said that a Revolutionary elm was cut down to afford room for the building.

Until the summer of 1905, a remarkably large sycamore tree stood at the foot of School street. It was six feet in diameter, the largest tree anywhere around. A lady ninety-one years of age remembers willow trees and other shrubbery growing in the cemetery near the Milk Row school, which she attended in her girlhood. She also remembers the custom among the scholars of sitting under a large sycamore tree at the foot of School street to eat their dinners on pleasant summer days, and that a large orchard grew in back of it. Doubtless this was an orchard planted by John Ireland, familiarly known as "Johnny Ireland" by old residents and passing travelers, who stopped for rest and refreshment at his little store at the corner of School street.

Possibly the few apple trees now found in the vicinity of Landers street and Preston road, streets cut through the Ireland estate, are survivors of that orchard. The pear trees there were probably set out by George W. Ireland, a grandson, fifty years ago. He was greatly interested in pear-raising, and amateurs in the art used to come to him to name their varieties. When asked how many kinds he had, his reply was, "Fifty too many!" The trees on the sidewalk were planted by him over forty years ago. They are elms and sycamore maples, alternating, the latter a variety imported from Europe about that time. A Lombardy poplar and a group of locusts also grew on the place.

His daughter writes: "The sycamore, or button-wood, as we used to call it, was the last of four I remember. One stood near Knapp street, and was hollow, and, as a child, I used to play in it, and remember a fine powder that covered the floor of the cave. A third stood on the other side of School street, nearly opposite Preston road, and the fourth was behind the house as it then stood, a little ways up Preston road on the right. The latter had twin trunks, and I remember that one was blown down in a storm, and nearly escaped injuring the house; then, for safety, the remaining half was cut down. I used to look out of my bedroom window at the great speckled arms of the one

opposite the house, and the sight of a sycamore tree to-day carries me back to my earliest memories.

"I remember an elm that was a landmark. It must have stood somewhere near Summit avenue and Vinal avenue. There was a stone wall running from Highland avenue to Bow street, and we used to go across the fields aiming for that tree by the wall, and from there across the old Revolutionary earthworks to the church on Cross street."

There was a group of willows near the brook which crossed School street, between Summer and Berkeley streets. A pond at the corner of School street, where the drug store now is, was the delight of some ducks. A spring on the opposite corner, covered by a roof, furnished water, which was carried to Cambridge through an aqueduct made of hollowed logs.

A row of ten elms of various sizes stands on Somerville avenue, between the Tube Works grounds and Park street. One of them, which appears much older than the rest, in front of the house formerly the headquarters of General Green, is one of two standing here which were of Revolutionary fame. Some of the others in the row, which in old times extended to the Middlesex Bleachery grounds, and numbered eighteen at the time of the widening of Somerville avenue in 1873-4, were set out by Samuel Tufts Frost about 1830. He carried them on his shoulder from the place where they grew.

A former resident of Laurel street remembers a large elm tree which loomed up from the vicinity of Dane's ledge, not probably very old, but noticeable, springing up from such unlikely surroundings.

The elm on Somerville avenue, near the foot of Central street, is one of the oldest in Somerville, and possibly the largest when in its prime. Twenty-five or thirty years ago some of the smaller branches from the centre of the tree nearly touched the ground. The widening of Somerville avenue brought the boundary line through the centre of the tree, and the change of grade left the large roots on the street side much above ground. These bulwarks were cut away, to the great injury of the tree, and this mutilation has caused it to age fast.

A seat was built around the base on the sidewalk, and formed a convenient resting-place for travelers. When that was worn out, the roots themselves were used for the same purpose, and the bark is quite smooth from constant friction.

It was attaining its prime at the time of the march of the British to Lexington,—at least, this is the tradition in the family,—and shaded an old house, unoccupied at the time, which was removed to Garden court in 1869, and is still standing. On the return of the British it afforded shelter for a wounded soldier, probably the one said to have been buried across the street.

Another old house, where the Widow Rand lived, stood near the other corner of Central street. Her son Thomas, it is said, in 1778, at the age of eighteen, set out the elm which was standing there till 1894. This tree, after the widening of Somerville avenue, occupied the centre of the sidewalk, and the fence was carried inward to accommodate travel. James Shute, the owner of the land at that time, was so interested to have the tree preserved, that he offered the use of his land for the sidewalk, that the tree might be kept as long as possible.

At one time, many years ago, a party of young people, some of them descendants of Thomas Rand, were passing there, when some one remarked, "We ought to take off our hats to this tree," and it was done. It was one of the few trees in Somerville old enough to command the homage of a younger generation, the members of which were directly descended from the one who had planted it. It was cut down to make way for building, and was found to be still sound to the core. Some of the wood was saved for the purpose of making chairs as mementos, and they are owned by descendants of the Rand family.

Up "the lane," as Central street was once called, on what are now the Unitarian parsonage grounds, grew a large wild pear tree, whose fruit made delicious preserves, and also tempted the boys, for their depredations often roused the then owner of the tree to indignation and strong language. The diameter of the tree was more than two feet at the time it was cut down, about fifteen years ago. Its removal was watched with interest by one who had remembered it from boyhood, and was an unusual spectacle, as it was cut down intact, and went to pieces like the

"Deacon's One-Hoss Shay." Before the top had touched the ground, the small twigs were broken into inch pieces, and after it had landed, a cloud of dust arose.

Old apple trees in the pasture known as Shute's field, on Central street, before it was cut up into house lots, were part of the Rand orchard. A very old apple tree on the easterly side of the street, the one shown in the frontispiece, which was made from a picture taken in "war-time," is still cared for by a member of the Rand family.

Benjamin Rand set out the row of maples next to the street, on the parsonage lawn, some time between 1850 and 1860. Columbus Tyler afterwards set out many others of different varieties on this place.

Rev. Augustus R. Pope began the good work of planting trees on the estate on the corner of Summer and Central streets, now owned by Henry Baker, about 1850. When it passed into the hands of Nathan Tufts, about 1860, there were many varieties, forty, between the gate and the front door. These were thinned out in after years, and others were planted in various parts of the grounds by Mr. Tufts. The horse-chestnut in the circle in the driveway was planted in 1844 in East Somerville, and transplanted here about 1860. The tulip tree, a gift of John K. Hall, was also removed a little later. A remark made by Mr. Hall that it would always be in blossom the Seventeenth of June was never forgotten. The larch trees, now so straight and tall, illustrate an old proverb, amended, "As the twig is un-bent, the tree is inclined," for one of them was tied to a broomstick when small to make it straight. The apple trees in the lower garden were moved from the grounds of N. E. Fitz on Winter Hill.

Old apple trees a few steps up Summer street challenge inquiry. One of them, on what was once the Thomas Brackett place, was brought there, a good-sized tree, in 1852-3 or 4.

In the fall of 1847, or the spring of 1848, fruit trees and an elm were set out on Harvard street, at the corner of the westerly part of Chestnut court, by Samuel Brackett. They probably came from some nursery. The tree next to the corner was set out by Lebbeus Stetson about 1850. The tree was quite large, and Mr. Stetson was laughed at when he insisted that it could

be transplanted and live. The price paid for it was \$6, and it was brought from a tract of land just across the railroad, very near the Franklin school. It out-topped the others in the court.

The apple trees on Ezra Robinson's place near by, on Spring street, now owned by John M. Woods, were good-sized trees in 1847.

The well-known "Round House," built by Enoch Robinson in 1850, has near it an elm set out by him soon after, and a double birch tree, which grew up of its own accord. A sweet-brier rose, brought from Polly Swamp, tempts the children in the springtime with its lovely blossoms.

At the foot of Spring street a tree of Revolutionary date stood in front of the old Kent house. A large willow once grew near Pitman street, and was the scene of many good times remembered by scholars of the Franklin school. The girls used to sit in the branches, which spread out near the ground, and the boys made whistles of the twigs, which led to trouble in school later.

The Franklin school yard, now a playground, is well stocked with shade trees, which were set out under the supervision of the school committee in 1849 or 1850. One of the scholars recollects that Deacon Charles Forster, so well remembered by residents of Winter Hill, was on the school committee and had a prominent part in the work. Another scholar remembers the willows at the foot of the yard in 1847. None are there now, but two or three peep over the high fence of the Bleachery, and a row of them probably once thrived on the border of a creek there.

A walk along Elm street reveals a thoroughfare in keeping with its name. A row of aged pine trees, however, on the corner of Cedar street gives a little diversion to the fancy. These pine trees were probably set out by John Tufts, son of that John Tufts whose house on Sycamore street has long been a landmark. Mr. Tufts lived for some time in the old house which stood on this estate until within a few years. There were some cedar trees in the front yard. Cedar street was probably named from the great number of cedars growing in the vicinity. Years ago it was a pasture, known as the "cedar pasture," and was owned and

used by Thomas Rand, whose grandsons drove the cows there and gathered wild rose leaves for distilling.

Old residents remember a small, round pond, with an island and solitary pine tree, just beyond Cedar street on the left. John Tufts set out the pine tree, it is said, and the place was a playground for the boys of the neighborhood. As is often the case, at one time they wished to build a fire. The tree was still small, and, with unusual thoughtfulness, they inverted a barrel over it to protect it from the heat. Pond, tree, and island are now things of the past, and looking at the spot, now built over with houses, it is difficult to see where a local poet drew his inspiration for the following poem, one of many dainty productions from the pen of a lifelong resident of Somerville, nearly, Lewis C. Flanagan:—

PINE ISLAND POND.

“’Tis even so; within our city’s bounds
We have a pond; not one with bottom paved
And edges curbed with stone, but rough and plain
From Nature’s hand; nor large, nor deep, yet still
A pond; and equi-distant from its shores
An island stands; and though a modest lump
Of earth, that may not be compared with those
On which the salt waves lay their angry hands,
By geographic rule as much an isle
As Cuba’s slope or Iceland’s stormy pile.

“The urchin small, when asked to give at school
Description of an isle, forgets his text;
At which the teacher leads his truant mind
To this, the spot which he himself has seen
That very day; and though the growing boy
Soon scorns to build upon domestic ground,
But names some vasty pillar of the sea,
The teacher tries again with younger minds,
And smiles, perhaps, to see the lads refuse
To own the step they once did gladly use.

“From out the turf a solitary pine
Sends up its bristling spire to heaven;
Its branches gently wave with summer winds,
And bend and break to winter’s ruder blast;
Among its fragrant boughs the blackbird rears
Her young; and in his pilgrimage the crow
Will tarry long upon its tufty top;
But not alone the ‘feathered tribe’ possess
The tree, for at its roots two muskrats have their home,
And oft abroad for food and pleasure roam.

“But now must close the pond’s romantic praise;
The red deer comes not now to bathe his flanks,
Nor does the Wampanoag send across
The wave his birchen keel. If erst they did
Frequent the spot, they leave no sign; but in
Their stead the docile heifer seeks the tide
To slake her thirst; while on the shore the frog
Sings pensive roundelays at day’s decline;
Yet, e’en with these, the eye is sometimes fond
Of resting on the pine, the isle, the pond.”

Continuing up Elm street, we come to the home of Timothy Tufts. Here are two large elm trees which were set out by Mr. Tufts’ grandfather before the Revolution. On a knoll several rods back from Elm street is another old elm, notable for its size and thrifty condition, which was set out at or soon after the time he built a modest cottage there at his marriage in 1761. The tree is best seen from Banks street. Inquiry brings out the existence of another tree, a pear tree still bearing, which was also set out by Mr. Tufts’ grandfather. A very large red cedar, whose trunk was more than a foot in diameter, once grew on Willow avenue not far away.

From Willow avenue to Davis square was a tract known as “Rand’s woods.” In the ‘sixties it was a resort for enthusiasts in botany. A little further north, where the power-house now is, was another “cedar pasture,” owned, as were the woods, by Benjamin Rand, of North Cambridge. Mrs. Rand was wont to

say that probably many a sermon had been rehearsed in the "cedar pasture." In the rear of the houses on Hall avenue is a group of these cedar trees, twelve in number, which may or may not have been set in place, they are so nearly on the boundary line. They seem like stranded waifs from the past looking on in wonder at the prosperity around them.

A large cherry tree on Cameron avenue has for a long time attracted the attention of an occasional passer-by by its size, knotted trunk and branches. Residents are so used to it they think nothing of it, except in cherry-time, when it is besieged by boys. It measures ten feet, four inches in circumference. It is one of three fine-fruited trees which grew here, together with many other excellent varieties of fruit, on what is best known as the Hayes estate. By rough calculation, it must be about seventy-five years old. The Hayes estate of fifty acres was purchased of Philemon Russell, and was remembered by a lady, now deceased, as an extremely pleasant place to visit sixty years or more ago. The cherry trees, red and black ox-hearts, golden porters, and other delicious varieties, a well, and a waving field of mowing, with a cart-path through it, left such an impression that, in after years, when in search of a place for a home, her thoughts turned to this spot, and she was fortunate enough to be able to purchase a lot here. During the Rebellion this tract of level field was used as a camp and drill-ground for soldiers, and was called Camp Cameron.

A large elm on the sidewalk in front of the Baptist Church on College avenue is well on towards a hundred years old, according to one who remembers it as a large tree in his boyhood. It grew up naturally along by the stone wall. A large elm further on, in front of an old house known as the Hall house, now demolished, still holds its own. There was an old elm tree at the junction of College avenue and Broadway.

On Broadway, nearly up to Clarendon Hill, is a group of beautiful trees, which seem like an old-time family, with its patriarchs and young people. Some of these trees have doubtless seen the fortunes of more than a hundred years. The largest one is nearly opposite Simpson avenue, and the trunk measures

thirteen feet in circumference. A near-by resident says: "It was a fine, spreading tree, whose branches came down nearly to the ground, so that the children of the Walnut Hill school used to swing on them. There was a pond near, but the sewers have drained it. Of the elms on the Walnut Hill school lot, adjoining on the east, the largest one grew up naturally; the others were set out by the town probably about 1849 or 1850."

The elm in the yard nearly opposite this group of trees is almost 100 years old. The above-mentioned writer tells this story of it: "I have heard my mother say, after she came here, sixty-six years ago, there was a man who, when he drove by, would stop his team, jump over the stone wall, and clasp his hands around the tree to see how much it had grown. He said, one Sunday, when walking out with a girl, they pulled up two switches, and set them out. His died, but hers lived. They did not know the man, and he came but seldom.

"One very cold winter's day father decided to cut the elm down. He ground the axe and came into the house to whet it by the fire. Mother did not want the tree cut down, and kept him busy talking till it was too dark. Next day there was other work, so the tree was spared."

A small elm was removed from this locality by Lorenzo W. Dow about 1852, and stands, a notable tree, in his yard on the top of Clarendon Hill.

On the golf grounds there is a stump of a chestnut tree, four or five feet long, and a yard in diameter, with new growth springing from the old root. The writer's theory in regard to this is, that it may have been a sapling left at the time the original woods were cut. Calculations based on the average rate of growth of chestnut trees would bring the age of this tree to 120 years at the time it was cut down, now many years ago, and carry the date of it back to the time of the Revolution. If this is correct reasoning, there is a chance to preserve in one of the young shoots a real child of the forest.

(To be continued.)

SOMERVILLE

[Composition written in 1851 by a pupil, eleven years of age, of the old Franklin school on Somerville avenue.]

Somerville is a beautiful town, about three miles from Boston, the capital of Massachusetts.

There are two ranges of hills running nearly through the centre of the town, which adds much to its beauty and interest. These ranges were formerly called Prospect and Winter Hills. The view from these hills on a clear day in summer is said to be one of the most beautiful and picturesque in America, or perhaps in the world.

This town was formerly a part of Charlestown, from which it was set off and incorporated about twelve years ago, by the request of the inhabitants, and given the romantic name of Somerville.

The number of inhabitants at that time was about 1,500. They have now increased to more than 3,000, and the hills and valleys are nearly covered with neat cottages, splendid houses, and a variety of romantic dwellings, with gardens attached, in which grow flowers, fruit trees, bushes, and shrubbery of such descriptions as flourish best in this climate.

There is also in this town a large bleachery and dye house, also an extensive concern for the manufacture of brass tubes for locomotive boilers.

Brick-making is carried on extensively both with and without steam power. The McLean Asylum is in this town. There are three railroads that run through the town, the Fitchburg, Lowell, and Maine. There is also a line of omnibuses, so that you can go to Boston and return at almost any time of day. These facilities add much to the convenience and comfort of the inhabitants.

The schools of Somerville are said to be equal to any in the state. There are several primary, grammar, and also one high school, all of which are conducted on the most approved principles; and if the scholars do not learn it is not the fault of the school committee or teachers.

There are several places of public worship, which are well attended. Our schoolhouse fronts the very road on which the British soldiers marched to Lexington and Concord early on the nineteenth of April, 1775.

At the foot of what is now called Central street, on the southwest corner, stands a large elm tree. (It is a beautiful tree when covered with its rich, green foliage in summer.) A few yards towards the north is to be seen an old cellar, on which a dwelling stood at the time of the Revolution.

This dwelling was owned and occupied by a widow and her family. A little after twelve o'clock on the morning of the nineteenth of April, she was awakened by an unusual noise.

She instantly got up and went out, and, looking toward the road, she there saw large bodies of armed soldiers, marching silently on, the moonbeams glancing on their murderous weapons.

There was no sound of marshal music to stir the soldier's heart to battle or to victory, but they passed on, like midnight assassins, bent on deeds of treachery and murder, and such indeed proved to be their errand. The widow drew a long breath, and, leaving her place of concealment, she instantly aroused her oldest boy, a youth about fifteen years of age, and despatched him to the nearest neighbor with the news that the troops had passed up the road. This neighbor immediately mounted his horse and rode to Old Cambridge, where he gave the alarm. The bell of the parish church was rung, the intelligence, spreading, soon reached Lexington; the rest is matter of history.

The battle of Lexington was the beginning of the drama of the Revolution, which ended so glorious to our country, and for which we should be so thankful.

CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1825**By Frank M. Hawes**

(Continued.)

1832-1833.

"For the ensuing summer term the trustees are happy to find they have been able to meet the wishes of the inhabitants of the several districts by the reappointment to every school of the former highly acceptable and competent teachers." These are: J. N. Sherman, at Milk Row; Miss Abba Mead, at Winter Hill; Manda (Miranda) Whittemore, at the Russell, and Mary W. Jeffurds at the Gardner districts. Miss Jeffurds is allowed to keep some private scholars not exceeding six, and to receive compensation therefrom. Messrs. Runcy and Hawkins are empowered to attend to the schools outside the Neck, the same as last year. They engage for the winter term Miles Gardner, for the Gardner school; Elliot Valentine, for Winter Hill; and Joseph S. Hastings, for the Russell district. In September Mr. Walker resigned at the Neck, to go to the Hawes school, South Boston, and Amos P. Baker was elected to succeed him. The death of Mr. Baker was reported December 20, and Aaron D. Capen was placed over this school.

Through Amos Tufts and David Devens, Esq., executors of the will of Deacon Thomas Miller, the trustees received \$100, the income of which was to be used for the schools. Voted that the school recess shall not exceed ten minutes; that the trustees supply Mr. Fairbanks' school with three dozen slates; that all lady teachers in the primary schools be allowed nine afternoons in the course of the year to visit all the other primary schools; and that children may enter from the primary to the other schools at the age of seven, instead of eight, at the discretion of the teacher.

Among the bills approved is one for \$40.80 to Martin Draper. He may have finished out the winter term at the Russell school, as Mr. Hastings, January 28, requested to be discharged from the same, "with reasons."

At the final examinations in April there were enrolled in the ten primary schools 610 scholars; in the five grammar schools,

639; in the four schools without the peninsula, 280; making a total of 1,529. The lamentable number of absences is commented upon. "These absentees hang like a dead weight about the school; the course of instruction is greatly interrupted, and those who are punctual and constant are retarded in their progress. The remedy is alone with the parents."

The Rules and Regulations for the Government of the Charlestown Free Schools, adopted by the Board of Trustees, and bearing the date, January 1, 1833, is of interest at this point. After stating the age at which children may attend the primary and the grammar schools (from four to eight, and from eight to fifteen), the hours for the school session are given,—8 to 11 and 2 to 5, from April 1 to October 1; 9 to 12 and 2 to 5 during the other half year, except on short days, when the schools may be closed at sunset. Instructors are to be in their rooms and to ring the bell ten minutes before the time of opening school. After the school is opened, no scholar shall be admitted without written excuse from his parent or guardian. Each school is divided into four classes, sub-divisions to be left to the teacher.

The holidays shall be Wednesday and Saturday afternoons; Election Day in January; Fast Day and the day after examinations in April; Monday, June 1, and June 17; July 4; in August, the time of meeting of the American Institute of Instruction and the day of Commencement at Harvard; the day after examinations in October; Thanksgiving Day; Christmas Day. These rules are to be enforced in the schools outside the Neck so far as is advisable. This year, also, changes were made in the curriculum, and the following list was authorized and approved:—

Fourth class, primary, alphabetical charts, words of two syllables.

Third class, Introduction to the National Spelling Book, Worcester's Second Book.

Second class, Emerson's National Spelling Book, Easy Reader, Worcester's Second Book.

First class, the New Testament, Emerson's National Spelling Book, the Analytical Reader, Hall's Geography, Arithmetic Cards,

Fourth class, grammar school, the Spelling Book, the Testament, the Analytical Reader, Parley's First Book of Geography.

Third class, Beauties of the Bible, Worcester's Epitome of Geography, Worcester's Third Book, Boston Atlas, Frost's Grammar.

Second class, Murray's Grammar and Exercises, Walker's Dictionary, Natural Reader, Frost's Grammar, Field's American Geography and Atlas.

First class, the First Class Book, Young Ladies' Class Book, Walker's Dictionary, Murray's Grammar and Exercises, Worcester's Geography, or Elements of History, Progressive Exercises in Composition.

Writing schools, Emerson's Second Part, Colburn's Sequel, Boston Writing Slips.

The following books may be used by the consent of the teachers and trustees: Blake's Astronomy, Grund's Natural Philosophy, Woodbridge's History of the United States, Parley's First Book of History, Worcester's Sequel to the Spelling Book, The Academical (Boys') Speaker, Grund's Geometry, Bookkeeping. Sullivan's Political Class Book is to be put in the schools for reference.

1833-1834.

It was voted early this season to retain the services of Mr. Sherman at No. 5, at the salary of \$360, and to pay the teacher at the Neck \$600. Miss Kezia Russell was appointed to teach the summer term in the Russell district, and Miss Abby Mead at Winter Hill. For the winter term the appointments were: Aaron B. Magoun to the Winter Hill school for six months, beginning the first Monday in November, at \$32 per month; and H. K. Curtis for the Russell district, four months, at \$30. The care of the outside schools was assigned to Messrs. Adams and Hawkins for the trustees.

At a special meeting held June 20, 1833, it was voted that teachers of the public schools be requested to parade their scholars on the day of the reception of the President of the United States, under the direction of the chief marshal, and

agreeably to the request of the committee of arrangements, and that the schools have a vacation during that day—June 24.

The petition of John Tufts and others praying for a removal of the schoolhouse in Milk Row was referred to Messrs. Willard, Frothingham, and (later) Hawkins. This seems to be the first move on record looking to the establishment of the Prospect Hill school on Medford street. "Voted that teachers receive no scholar into school after twenty minutes past the hour for commencing school."

The only reference to teachers within the peninsula this year was November 8, 1833, when James Swan was elected writing master at the Training Field school, Reuben Swan, Jr., writing master in the Town Hill school, and O. C. Felton as master of the school at the Neck. As the last-named did not accept, William D. Swan was put in charge of this school. All three teachers received a salary of \$650, which was raised to \$700 later on. About the time which we are considering, the school for girls, which had been at the Training Field, was transferred to the Town Hill side, and the boys' school at the latter place now occupied the newer and more commodious building at the Training Field. I find no mention of this change previous to the spring of 1834, but it may have been earlier than that.

December 30 it is voted that the seats in the primary schools are to have convenient backs added to them, but that the seats in the upper schools remain unaltered. March 31, 1834, a petition that James Swan be discharged from his school, signed by Bradbury Follet and others, was received and placed on file.

From the annual report read in town meeting that May, we learn that the average number of pupils in the ten primary grades is seventy to a teacher; that the Female school, now on Town Hill, with two male teachers, contains 240 pupils; that the Male school at the Training Field, with two teachers, contains 247; and the Neck school, with one master, 116. In the schools outside the peninsula there are 75, 127, 41, and 35, respectively.

1834-1835.

The teachers for the summer term this year were as follows: Miss Abby Mead, re-elected to the Winter Hill; Miss Ann

W. Locke, of the Milk Row district (later on a teacher in one of the primary schools); Miss Martha T. McKoun for the Russell school; and Miss Sarah M. Crowninshield for the Gardner school.

It was voted in May to make repairs at Milk Row school. These were all the more needed, for, June 30, we read: "It having been represented by Mr. C. Thompson that the windows in the schoolhouse there have been very badly broken, it was voted that the committee in charge get evidence and act as they think proper." Bills for work at the Milk Row schoolhouse were approved, among them being Isaac Kendall's for \$12.44, and John W. Mulliken's for \$97.41.

Miss Locke, following as she did a popular teacher like Mr. Sherman, seems to have had a hard school to manage. A petition signed by Alfred Allen and others was circulated for her removal, but the trustees voted to sustain the teacher. "They feel bound to say that their confidence in the talents, deportment, and qualifications of Miss Locke remain undiminished. They recommend that she continue in the school and be encouraged in the arduous duties assigned her." (Signed by Joseph T. Tufts and Charles Thompson.) We read of no further trouble, and her school was examined in its turn, October 24, at 9 o'clock. The winter schools outside the Neck were assigned as follows: At Milk Row to Luther (should be Calvin) Farrar; at Winter Hill to A. B. Magoun; at the Russell district to Henry I. Jewett; at the Gardner school to William E. Faulkner. As Mr. Magoun did not accept, Henry Bulfinch was appointed.

Paul Willard, who signed the annual report, says: "It would be unjust to withhold an expression of the belief that the three high schools within the Neck, under the care of five masters, have reached a standing not before attained by them." These five teachers were Joshua Bates (salary, \$800) and James Swan (\$700) at the Training Field school; Nathan Merrill (\$700) and Reuben Swan, Jr. (\$700), at the Town Hill, or Female, school; William D. Swan (\$700) at the Neck School. We are able to name the teachers who served in the ten primary schools this year, at a maximum salary of \$225. They were: A. G. Twy-

cross, Susan Sawyer, Mary Walker, Hannah Andrews, Hannah Rea, Betsey Putnam, Ann Brown, Emeline G. White, Elizabeth L. Johnson, Margaret W. Locke, Ann W. Locke, Eliza (Ann?) Cutter, Lydia A. Skilton. The permanent funds of the trustees of Charlestown schools in 1834 were:—

| | |
|-------------------------------------|---------|
| 35 shares of Union bank stock..... | \$3,500 |
| Town note on interest..... | 1,200 |
| Deacon Miller's legacy..... | 100 |
| Two primary schools, valued at..... | 600 |
| | <hr/> |
| | \$5,400 |

1835-1836.

The teachers for the summer schools beyond the peninsula were Miss Ann E. Whipple for Milk Row, Miss Abby Mead for Winter Hill, Miss Kezia Russell for the Russell, and Miss Anna B. Mead for the Gardner. These schools were assigned to the charge of Messrs. Hazeltine and Allen for the trustees. Among bills approved was that of A. W. Whittredge for \$52.50. The winter terms were to be taught by Norwood Damon at the Russell, Edward Wyman at Winter Hill, Timothy P. Rogers at the Gardner, and Miss Ann Whipple was appointed for the Milk Row school, at the same compensation as was given last winter to a male teacher. In the annual report Miss Whipple was highly commended. As Mr. Damon resigned November 30, Mr. (Samuel?) Swan was put in his place. The primary school occupied by Ann W. Locke, having been burned in the late conflagration (Monday, August 31, 1835?), was repaired.

It was voted April 16, 1836, to insert in the next town warrant an article to see whether the town will establish a high school agreeable to sections 5 and 7 of the twenty-third chapter of the Revised Statutes.

Many changes among the teachers are reported this year, but their names are not mentioned on the records. There were now twelve primary schools with an enrollment of 802 scholars, or nearly sixty-seven on an average for each teacher. The Male school had 228, the Female 211, and the Neck schools, both male and female, 129. At Winter Hill, Milk Row, Russell, and

Gardner schools the number of pupils was 80, 116, 29, and 30, respectively, making a total of 1,625.

During the year Nathan Merrill, of the Town Hill school, and William D. Swan, of the Neck school, asked for more salary, and it was voted to give each \$100, in addition to the \$100 they then received. The primary teachers presented a petition for more pay, stating as the cause the high rate of living and the additional quantity of fuel which has been needed in consequence of the unusual cold weather. It was voted to give them \$10 each, and to defer the subject of a greater raise to the next town meeting. Edwin Munroe and others of Milk Row district petition that the trustees will recommend the expediency of another school. Oliver Holden and others "urge the removal of the cupola and bell from the Town Hill school, as it obstructs the view of the dial on Rev. Dr. Fay's church from the inhabitants in the north section of the town. The boy who rings it has to go some distance. He is consequently unable to return on time to commence his studies with the rest of his class. It is also an interruption to the female department."

1836-1837.

The teachers for this summer outside the peninsula were: Miss Abby Mead, of the Winter Hill school; Miss Ann E. Whipple, of the Milk Row; Miss Burnham, of the Russell; and Miss Wyman, of the Gardner. In accordance with the vote of the town, Messrs. Warren and Valentine were requested to look up the law relating to the establishment of high schools. February 23, 1837, they reported in favor of such a school, and their report was presented at the next town meeting.

The formation of a new district school in Milk Row by a division of the district, as referred to the trustees by the town, was next referred to Messrs. Allen and Underwood as a special committee to consider the matter and report later. They found, May 30, "that the number of scholars warrants a division of said district, commencing at a point in the Russell district, thence running easterly south of John Tufts' house to the south side of the wind mill on Prospect Hill; thence northeast of the house

of William Bonner, embracing in the present district the houses of Ephraim Hill and Charles Miller; thence from said Miller's to Cambridge line, west of Charles Wait's house. Exertions have been made to find suitable accommodations for a school by hiring a room, but the committee has been unsuccessful. They recommend the erection of a house to be located near the house of Edwin Munroe, a lot of land suitable for which will be presented to the town by said Munroe and C. Harrington, and may be erected for \$500." Messrs. Allen, Underwood, and Thompson are empowered to get a deed of this land and to build thereon. Later (in November) this section of Milk Row received the name of the Prospect Hill district, and \$600 was appropriated for the building. The committee in charge of this school were instructed not to allow the children of John Runey to remain at the school unless he consents to be set off from Winter Hill to Prospect Hill district.

In regard to "a petition of the teachers within the Neck for a vacation of the first week in June, as Boston teachers have, it was voted inexpedient."

The teachers for the winter term outside the peninsula were: W. S. Wiley, of the Gardner school; Levi Russell, of the Russell school; David Curtis, of the Winter Hill; Joel Pierce, of the Milk Row; and Norwood P. Damon, of the Prospect Hill. The three last-named received \$35 per month. Evidently the new school did not start under the most favorable auspices. The teacher was requested to vacate on the last day of March, and Levi Russell, who had finished his own school, was hired to finish out the term at Prospect Hill. The last weeks of the winter term at Winter Hill school were taught by Miss Abby Mead, who received \$17.50 therefor. She respectfully declined her appointment to the school for the next summer.

January 30, 1837, Dr. Valentine is authorized to visit the schools and see that all children are vaccinated. He is to present his bill for payment when parents are unable to pay. This vote was passed in consequence of finding that a large number of scholars had never been vaccinated. It was also voted that no children should be admitted into any free school of Charles-

town without vaccination certificates, and that no unvaccinated child should be allowed to remain in school after February 13, 1837.

From the annual report, read at the May town meeting, we learn that an average of eleven per cent., or over 200 scholars, have been absent from school the past year. "This is the cause of most of the corporal punishment which is inflicted in the schools, as those absent acquire habits which are altogether incompatible with order and discipline." The whole number of scholars on the rolls is 1,781, of whom 294 are in the five districts without the peninsula. The cupola has been removed from the schoolhouse on Town Hill, and a new one erected on the school at the Training Field. "This year assistant teachers have been appointed in all the grammar schools. This will enable the masters to dispense altogether with monitors, and to see that the younger members of the school receive a proper share of attention." (Charlotte Cutter was one of these assistants. Her services at the Neck school began April 17, 1837.) In conclusion, the report says that evidently another school must be established and a building erected. Such improvements can be made for \$2,600, and it is so recommended. (Signed) Charles Thompson, president; Thomas Brown, Jr., secretary.

1837-1838.

The summer schools beyond the Neck, for this season, were under the following instructors: Miss Ann P. Whipple, of the Prospect Hill school; Rachel T. Stevens, of the Milk Row school; Miss Marv B. Gardner, of the Russell school; Miss Irene S. Locke, of the Gardner school; and Miss Sarah M. Burnham, of the Winter Hill school.

Teachers in these schools were informed, through Mr. Underwood, that they were to teach on Wednesday afternoons as heretofore. It seems that a petition had been circulated in favor of the half-holiday, but the parents objected to it. The compensation for keeping fires and sweeping at Milk Row, Prospect Hill, and Winter Hill was fixed at twenty cents per week. This year, 1837, we have the first mention of an annual vacation, to begin August 17 and to continue to September 1. About

this time the trustees voted to consider the advisability of discarding the New Testament as a reading book for the second class in the primary grades. Voted that teachers be allowed to sell books and stationery to their scholars. Messrs. Warren and Underwood were authorized to examine Miss E. H. Dodge, one of the primary teachers, to see how often she had dismissed without leave and how often she had left her school in charge of another person. A change at her school was found necessary.

The teachers of the winter schools in the outside districts were: Levi Russell at Prospect Hill; Wymond Bradley at Winter Hill; Oliver March at Milk Row; G. A. Parker at the Gardner; and George P. Worcester at the Russell. As Mr. Parker fell sick, his term was completed by Rachel T. Stevens. The schools were examined "and gave general satisfaction."

From the annual report we learn that there are now fourteen primary schools on the peninsula, with 957 pupils, or an average of seventy each. In the three grammar schools there are 830 pupils, and in the five schools beyond the Neck, 276, making a total of 2,063. "The increase is due to the fact that the Irish have given up their own separate establishment and are now sending their children to the public school." Then, again, the schools of Charlestown are open to all between the ages of four and sixteen, for which there is no statute, the universal custom being to the age of fifteen.

"The board has made a great effort this year to procure the abolishment of corporal punishment, and requested teachers to keep an account of such punishment, and to give detailed information in each instance to one of the trustees. In the female grammar school punishment has been wholly abandoned, and in all the resort to it has been far less frequent than formerly. The large boys have of their own accord formed themselves into societies for the prevention of profanity among themselves, and for mutual moral improvement. Many parents have aided them in collecting a library of well-selected books for their use. The exercise of singing has been pretty generally introduced into the schools, and to good advantage. The teachers willing to devote

an extra portion of time for the purpose of giving instruction in this exercise is one of the proofs of their enthusiastic devotion."

The report closes with a reference to the State Board of Education that has been lately established. An appropriation of \$10,000 is asked for. \$9,962 will be needed next year for teachers' salaries, against \$9,415 of this year. "A sense of duty compels us to ask an appropriation of \$200 for the repair of the schoolhouse in the Russell district. The building has not been repaired since its erection; the seats and benches are in bad condition, and the whole interior needs refitting."

1838-1839.

The teachers of the district schools this season were: Mary W. J. Evans, of the Gardner; Clara D. Whittemore, of the Russell; Sarah M. Burnham, of Milk Row; Elizabeth P. Whittredge, of Prospect Hill; and Abby Mead, of Winter Hill road. May 9 Mr. Forster was authorized to procure a teacher until Miss Mead is able to take charge. Miss Ellen A. Damon was elected to this position June 11. These schools were assigned to the care of Messrs. Allen and Underwood for the trustees. They gave permission to children contiguous to the Neck who wished to attend the Neck school. It was they who had charge of the repairs made during the summer at the Russell school. "It was voted that the summer vacations this year be the first week in June and the last two weeks in August, and that the district schools be allowed a vacation every Wednesday afternoon during the summer." Voted that the form of Register received from the secretary of the Board of Education be adopted, and that the teachers begin with it the first of June, 1838. Voted that the board attend the convention at Lowell Monday, July 27, "and that teachers of the grammar schools be invited to attend with us."

Voted that a male teacher be elected for Winter Hill, to begin September 1. and continue until May 1. James Hovey received the appointment. Amos F. Allen was elected to the Prospect Hill school, Levi (should be Philemon R.) Russell to the Russell school, William R. Bagnall to Gardner Row, and Joel Pierce to the Milk Row school.

November 15, 1838, an attempt was made to arrange the boundaries between the Bunker Hill and Winter Hill districts. This is the first time I find mention of a Bunker Hill district. March 18, 1839, the trustees passed a vote that the Neck school hereafter be called the Bunker Hill school. A month before this, December 11, Benjamin F. Tweed was chosen to succeed William D. Swan at this school.

A petition from Charles Adams and others residing on the top of Winter Hill for establishing a primary school there, and requesting the board to present the same to the town in their annual report, was presented by Mr. Forster. Mr. Allen presented a report of the examination of the Winter Hill school, which was ordered to be placed on file. A petition from Clark Bennett and William Bonner to have the lines of the Prospect Hill school more properly defined, was presented and referred to the whole board.

The annual report for this year is very satisfactory in that it gives us much information. The schools are taken up individually, beginning with the Gardner district. "This school is about seven miles from the Town House, and is contiguous to the western part of Woburn, being a little less than three miles from Woburn meeting house. To reach it the road leads through the middle of West Cambridge, turning to the right as you go by the meeting house of that place. There are about fifteen or twenty families in the district. During the summer this school was under the charge of Mrs. Evans. The average attendance was seventeen out of a total of nineteen. The teacher had classes in geometry, algebra, and natural philosophy, nor were the common branches neglected. Also, there was instruction in the rudiments of music. The winter term was under William R. Bagnall, with an average of twenty out of twenty-four."

"The Russell district verges upon the town of West Cambridge, the schoolhouse being about one-half mile from that meeting house. During the summer this school was under Miss Clara Whittemore. Whole number, twenty-four; average attendance, eighteen, mostly small children. She had brought the school from a state of confusion to one of discipline. During

the winter Phila Russell had charge. Whole number, thirty-seven; average, thirty. His efforts and skill are worthy of the highest commendation. He insisted upon the thoroughness of all his pupils. His uniform practice is, if a pupil makes a blunder in recitation, he is compelled afterwards to repeat that part of his answer correctly,—as a word going around the class must be spelled correctly by each one who has failed, no matter how much time it takes. The schoolhouse here has been much improved by alterations made in pursuance of the recommendation in the last report. These two schools cost the town more than any others in town, in proportion to the number of scholars; in consequence of the change in teachers, probably they receive the least benefit of any." The wish is expressed that the Gardner district might unite with Woburn, and the Russell with West Cambridge. "The Milk Row school is adjacent to the town of Cambridge. Last summer it was under Miss Burnham, with seventy scholars enrolled, and an average attendance of fifty. This shows a culpable degree of absences. The committee spoke in high terms of the school while under this lady. During the winter the school was under Joel Pierce, with an average of sixty out of eighty scholars. He is an experienced, thorough teacher, very precise in his regulations and mode of teaching."

"The Prospect Hill school was erected three years ago to accommodate the inhabitants of that part, formerly a part of Milk Row district. Miss E. P. Whittredge was teacher last summer, and had an average of fifty out of sixty-one pupils. This lady received the decided approbation of the board. She was efficient and faithful. She divided the school into six classes, thus the youngest had more attention than usually falls to their lot. Amos S. Allen was the winter teacher, and had an average of forty-five out of a total of sixty enrolled,—a degree of irregularity wholly inconsistent with the interests of the district. A great improvement in penmanship was noticed. The teacher, though somewhat inexperienced, appeared competent to perform his duties and desirous of doing so."

"The next district is the Winter Hill, though the schoolhouse is situated at some distance from the eminence of that

name. This school was more unfortunate than its neighbors. The board had appointed for the summer term a female of high character, but sudden affliction in her family prevented her continuance. At a late hour another lady was chosen, after the school had been closed for some weeks. She taught one month, and after another recess a third lady was found for eight weeks. A child who attends such a school from the age of four to sixteen will have been under the plastic hand of perhaps twenty-four different teachers, or more than he has cousins or family relations. James Hovey, a graduate, next taught the school eight months. Average, thirty-one out of forty-five, and second term, thirty-three out of fifty-nine. The first class made manifest progress, and the penmanship of the whole school was creditable."

"In all the above schools instruction is given in penmanship, reading, orthography, grammar, arithmetic, history, geography, and sometimes to a few in algebra, natural philosophy, and astronomy. Some of the teachers may fail to make their pupils good readers for the obvious reason that they are not good readers themselves. It is not surprising that these schools have been stationary for the last ten years. Therefore the board would recommend for Milk Row, Prospect Hill, and Winter Hill an essential alteration in their school establishment. They ought to be placed under the same arrangement with the schools of the peninsula. The board would change these three district schools into primary ones for the younger children, and recommend that a grammar school or high school be established in the Prospect Hill district, making four annual schools. For this purpose it would only be necessary to raise the schoolhouse in that district so that a good schoolroom may be made in the basement story for a primary school. This would give an average for the four schools of fifty scholars. In the high school one master would be sufficient at present, and he should be qualified to teach in all branches of English study and in the ancient languages. His salary need not exceed \$600. The whole amount now paid to teachers in these three districts is \$990; by adding \$240, four permanent teachers can be procured under the new

arrangement. Thus, by increasing the expense one-fourth, the greater benefit to be derived will be fourfold. To make the Winter Hill and Milk Row schoolhouses more fit for primary schools, some repairs and alterations will be necessary."

Primary schools within the peninsula:—

No. 1, the school at the Neck, is kept in a building hired of T. J. Elliot. It has been under the charge of Miss Malvina B. Skilton over three years.

No. 2, at Eden street, in a room hired of J. K. Frothingham, is under Miss Mary Walker, who has been longer in this employment than any other of our teachers.

No. 3, in the vestry of the Methodist meeting house, is kept by Miss Charlotte A. Sawyer.

No. 4, in School street, kept by Miss Susan L. Sawyer, before the end of the year (1838) had an offshoot taken from it, which was put under Miss Esther M. Hay. An examination of both was held in Boylston chapel.

No. 5. This school is kept by Miss E. H. Dodge, in the vestry of the Universalist meeting house on Warren street. (The rental of the room was \$50 per year.)

No. 6 is held in a small rear room off Lawrence street, and is under Miss Betsey Putnam.

No. 7 is kept by Miss E. E. Smith, in a room on Harvard street, hired of O. Jaquith.

No. 8 is in a room under No. 7, with entrance from Prescott street. Miss M. E. Chamberlin is the teacher.

No. 9 belongs to the town, and is on Common street. The regular teacher, Miss L. A. Skilton, was succeeded towards the end of the term by Miss M. H. Dupee.

No. 10, also owned by the town, on the Training Field, in the rear of the Winthrop school, was under Miss A. W. Chamberlin, but now Miss Joanna S. Putnam is in charge.

No. 11, in a room near the square, was kept by Miss Crocker, but later by Miss Elizabeth B. Marshall.

No. 12, kept by Miss Ann W. Locke, is in the basement of Boylston chapel.

No. 13, at the Point, in a room hired of Mr. Ferrin, is kept by Miss Battles.

No. 14, at Moulton's Point, established in 1837, is in a new house erected by the board on a lot belonging to the town. The teachers there have been Mrs. M. H. Dupee and Miss Lydia W. Locke.

In October, 1838, a union exhibition of the first classes of the three upper schools was held in the Town Hall. It was a great pleasure to a large audience.

Of the three high schools, the Bunker Hill (Neck) is for both sexes. William D. Swan, the principal, goes to Boston, and will be succeeded by Benjamin F. Tweed. The assistant is Miss Charlotte Cutter. The Harvard school, on Town Hill, is for girls. The teachers here are Paul Sweetser and Charles Kimball. (His term of service began before May, 1837.) Assistants: Miss M. E. Jones, Miss C. A. Johnson, Miss Fernald. The Winthrop school at the Training Field is for boys, the teachers being Mr. Bates and Samuel Swan, and for assistants, Miss Symmes and Miss Hay.

Expenses appended to the trustees' report of May, 1839:—

The bills for repairs in Russell district went beyond the appropriation.

| | |
|-------------------------------|----------|
| R. G. Tenney, for work..... | \$210.74 |
| Benjamin Track, for work..... | 4.00 |
| Moses Bacon, for work..... | 34.00 |

The auditors of all bills that came before the trustees were Richard Frothingham, Jr., and Charles Forster.

Special appropriation to repair Russell district

| | |
|---|----------|
| schoolhouse | \$200.00 |
| Salaries: Joshua Bates (Winthrop school)..... | 900.00 |
| and for teaching ancient languages..... | 100.00 |
| Samuel Swan..... | 800.00 |
| Mary B. Symmes..... | 200.00 |
| Sarah G. Hay..... | 200.00 |
| Harvard school:— | |
| N. Merrill..... | 45.00 |
| Paul H. Sweetser..... | 855.00 |
| Charles Kimball..... | 800.00 |

| | |
|--------------------|----------|
| Mary E. Jones..... | \$200.00 |
| M. S. Fernald..... | 200.00 |

Bunker Hill:—

| | |
|-----------------------|--------|
| William D. Swan..... | 724.25 |
| Robert Swan..... | 175.00 |
| B. F. Tweed..... | 157.50 |
| Charlotte Cutter..... | 200.00 |

Primary teachers, each \$210, fourteen
schools2,940.00

Winter Hill:—

| | |
|---------------------|--------|
| Ann E. Newell..... | 20.00 |
| Ellen A. Damon..... | 45.00 |
| James Hovey..... | 280.00 |

Prospect Hill:—

| | |
|----------------------------|--------|
| Miss E. P. Whittredge..... | 120.00 |
| Amos S. Allen..... | 210.00 |

Milk Row:—

| | |
|-------------------------|--------|
| Miss S. M. Burnham..... | 120.00 |
| Joel Pierce..... | 192.50 |

Russell district:—

| | |
|--------------------------|--------|
| Clara D. Whittemore..... | 96.00 |
| P. R. Russell, Jr..... | 120.00 |

Gardner district:—

| | |
|-------------------------|--------|
| M. W. J. Evans..... | 96.00 |
| William R. Bagnall..... | 120.00 |

(To be continued.)

Officers of Somerville Historical Society

1906-1907

| | |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------|
| President | Frank M. Hawes |
| First Vice-President | Levi L. Hawes |
| Second Vice-President | James F. Whitney |
| Third Vice-President | John F. Ayer |
| Treasurer | Seth Mason |
| Recording Secretary | Mrs. William B. Holmes |
| Corresponding Secretary | Mrs. Ella P. Hurd |
| Librarian and Curator | Alfred M. Cutler |

Council=at=Large

Charles D. Elliot

Miss Anna P. Vinal

L. Roger Wentworth

Committees for Year 1906=7

Publications

Sam Walter Foss, 249 Highland Ave. Sara A. Stone, 19 Central St.

Frank M. Hawes, 257 School St. Samuel C. Earle, 7 Electric Ave.

Military Records

Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St. L. L. Hawes, 164 Highland Ave.

John H. Dusseault, 42 Sargent Ave. Miss Mary A. Haley, 117 Summer St.

Hospitality

William B. Holmes, 60 Heath St. Mrs. L. B. Pillsbury, 17 Dartmouth St.

Mrs. William B. Holmes, 60 Heath St. Mrs. H. M. Heald, 438 Broadway

Mrs. F. D. Lapham, 3 Hathorn St.

Necrology

Professor D. L. Maulsby, 80 Curtis St. Miss E. A. Waters, 132 Perkins St.

Rev. Francis A. Gray, 19 Dartmouth St.

Historic Sites

Joseph O. Hayden, 174 Summer St. Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.

Aaron Sargent, 290 Broadway

Essays and Addresses

John F. Ayer, Wakefield Miss Florence E. Carr, 89 Oxford St

Seth Mason, 32 Madison St. William E. Brigham, 4 Hillside Ave.

Mrs. J. F. Ayer, Wakefield

Library and Cabinet

Alfred M. Cutler, 234 Medford St. Miss Edith B. Hayes, 52 Dartmouth St.

Mrs. L. L. Hawes, 164 Highland Ave.

Photographs

Benj. F. Freeman, 2 Mt. Vernon St. Albert L. Haskell, 422 Somerville Ave.

James F. Whitney, 40 Dartmouth St. Mrs. C. L. Maynard, 14 Greenville St.

Press and Clippings

Miss Lucy M. Stone, 15 Central St. Miss Annie S. Gage, 32 Marshall St.

Miss Anna P. Vinal, 9 Aldersey St. Mrs. Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.

Mrs. Ella P. Hurd, 55 Columbus Ave. Miss Mary E. Elliot, 59 Oxford St.

Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

January, 1907

Vol. V

No. 4

CONTENTS.

| | | |
|--|-----------------------------|---------|
| SOME OLD TREES—NUMBER 3 | <i>Sara A. Stone</i> | PAGE 85 |
| CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1825 | <i>Frank Mortimer Hawes</i> | 92 |

HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at 19 Central Street. Exchange list in charge of the Librarian and Curator Alfred Morton Cutler, 234 Medford Street, to whom all communications regarding exchanges should be addressed.

PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL C. EARLE

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. V.

JANUARY, 1907

No. 4

SOME OLD TREES.—NUMBER 3

By Sara A. Stone

The willows once growing on College avenue, near the golf grounds, were probably planted to protect a creek which ran into the Middlesex canal to keep it supplied with water. The canal was under construction early in 1800.

The Tufts College grounds, now so well adorned with trees, once presented a practically treeless hill. Early pictures of it show the lines of stone wall which divided the farms, and few or no trees. The last of the walnuts, which gave the name to the hill originally, were cut down by the soldiers encamped on Winter Hill for their log huts and back-logs. Aaron B. Magoun gave to the college in its first year a tree for every student from his nursery on Winter Hill. Otis Curtis, one of the trustees, superintended the planting of most of the trees on the hill, and set out the row of willows on College avenue, towards Medford. Ladies of the Universalist societies in the vicinity of Boston used to have "planting bees," with a public celebration and the planting of trees, from time to time. The row of elms set in front of the house of the first president are still standing, though the house has been moved away.

Of the tract formerly known as "Polly Swamp," a small piece, half an acre or less, remains on Albion street. A few oaks and some underbrush make a little spot of green, and eight cedar trees may be found in the vicinity. A few large elms, undoubtedly some of the original swamp, still grace several of the yards. This is all that is left of a large tract which once afforded fine cover for quail, which, in the memory of a well-known resident of Somerville, used to be seen crossing what is now Highland avenue.

On the southerly side of Broadway, not far from Magoun

square, are five large white-ash trees, which were set out by Joseph Adams some time previous to 1800. The largest of these is thirteen feet, ten inches in circumference, the smallest eight feet, six inches. Mr. Adams built his house, now better known as the Magoun house, on the top of Winter Hill in 1783. Of the orchard he planted there remain two apple trees. One of them has lately taken a new lease of life through the cultivation of a vegetable garden, and bears apples as fine in flavor as ever. (This tree was cut down December, 1906.) The other, and a very old cherry tree, are best seen from Central street, near Broadway.

On this estate a sweet apple tree was planted by one of the daughters, Rebecca, afterwards Mrs. Jonas Tyler, of Charlestown. As she died in 1804, the tree was in the neighborhood of a hundred years old when it was blown down in 1897. From some of the wood a frame for the charter of Anne Adams Tufts chapter, D. A. R., was made, and two gavels, one of which is the property of the chapter, and the other of the Coenonia Club.

Near the spot where the ash trees stand was an encampment of soldiers during the Revolution, who made part of the havoc cutting down trees mentioned earlier in this paper. The logs which formed their barracks were afterwards used by Mr. Adams to build his barn. Mr. Adams built a fence with a red gate, an entrance to the field, the line of which the ash trees bordered. Miss Augusta F. Woodbury, one of the early pupils of the high school, in 1854 wrote a poem inspired by these trees, which may be of interest here:—

THE OLD RED GATE.

“By the old red gate ’neath the white-ash tree,
In twilight’s pensive hour,
We have sat and watched the sun go down,
Gilding each bud and flower.

“The dearest friends of childhood there
Have sat and sung with me,
Have sung the songs we loved so well,
Beneath that dear old tree.

“We sat in the shade of the drooping boughs,
And listened to the chime
Of the evening bells, that solemnly
Proclaimed the flight of time.

“The soft, green grass of the earth was our couch;
No thought of sorrow then,
As we listened to the singing of the birds,
The flowers our diadem.”

Before 1824 an orchard of four or five acres was planted on this estate, and fifty years ago was flourishing in its prime where Magoun square now is. Aaron B. Magoun had a nursery on Winter Hill at a later time. A hackmatack, planted by John C. Magoun in 1821, or a little later, whose top leans from long struggles with prevailing winds, is a landmark from distant points to those whose home interests centre around this spot.

A large horse-chestnut, four white mulberry trees, and several elms on the terrace opposite attract attention by their size and appearance of vigor. The elms, remembered by a near-by resident as large trees in her girlhood, are at least seventy-five years old. Two Lombardy poplars of advanced age stand in the yard of a house on Main street, and peep over the top of the hill at the observer. Three large chestnut trees, a butternut, and half a dozen other mulberry trees formerly grew here. The mulberry trees were raised by William Woodbury, who imported the seed from Italy at the time of the craze for silk-worm culture. From 1836 to 1841 the state paid a bounty on mulberry trees. Another mulberry tree of the same kind stands on Sycamore street close to the railroad bridge. A butternut grows in the yard of the house on the opposite side.

A sapling, now grown to be a noble tree in its prime, was set out some time in the seventeen-seventies by John Tufts, when he began to occupy the Tufts house on Sycamore street, soon after General Lee left it. Mr. Tufts set it out to shade the well, and if it could speak it would tell a tale of domestic quiet and happiness, rather than one of the bruit of arms. In the memory

of one, at least, of the children of the second generation born in the house are stored pleasant pictures of days gone by, when the golden robin built her nest in the long branches, and a swing hung from a branch over the road or driveway which led up to the house from Medford street. The Somerville Historical Society also has pleasant and inspiring memories of the years when the old house was its headquarters.

Sycamore trees grew on each side of the driveway, and gave the name to the street. They were cut down long ago, and boards made of the wood were used to re-floor a shed of the Tufts house. Wood from the sycamore tree is not suitable for use in places exposed to the atmosphere, and so the new floor was not very durable.

A row of sycamore trees grew on each side of Medford street, from Central to Thurston, where there was a well and drinking trough for the wayfarer and Mr. Tufts' cattle. From Thurston to School, the land being somewhat lower, Mediord street was lined with willows. All these trees met overhead, and must have formed an attractive, shady avenue. At School street was a small pond with a large willow tree in the centre. A "resting-stone" near was often the stopping place on the way from school for one little girl, at least. Some of these willow trees still remain.

An orchard, with a great variety of fruit, was one of the attractions of this homestead, and there are left of it four trees, still bearing, three of which belong to a member of the second generation. Of the rest of the orchard, which was located across Medford street from the Tufts house, as well as back toward Central street, only the memory of a tree, the fruit of which was very sweet, though no larger than a crab-apple, remains.

Many of the trees on Forster street were set out by Deacon Charles Forster, who was interested in the formation of the first church in Somerville, and in other measures for the good of the community, when it was separated from Charlestown, in 1842.

Going down Broadway, one on the lookout for old trees is brought to a halt at the sight of a spreading apple tree on the estate of I. A. Whitcomb. Investigation leads one to conclude

that it is probably one of an orchard planted by Joseph Tufts, who lived in the Tufts homestead at the corner of Central street and Broadway, and died there in 1819. The orchard was located on both sides of Broadway. Four trees are still standing, two on the right going down, and two on the left in the yard of Selwyn Z. Bowman. The largest tree is said to have had a reach of seventy-two feet a few years ago.

Temple street may be called one of the oldest streets in Somerville, being originally the drive to the "Manor House" on "Ten Hills Farm," occupied successively by Sir Robert Temple, General Elias Hasket Derby, and Colonel Samuel Jaques. From detailed descriptions of people and events connected with "Ten Hills" already printed in *Historic Leaves*, one may glean the following facts about the trees:—

A winding drive led up to the house, "fringed on either side with the fragrant Balm of Gilead." "On either side of the house were magnificent elm trees. One, in particular, was unusually large, girding more than eleven feet, three feet from the ground. The spreading branches formed a fine support for a platform at a distance of thirty feet from the ground, and tea parties were given among the leaves, as many as eight or ten participating." Fruit trees abounded.

Fifty years or so ago there were seventeen elms in the vicinity. A boy of seven proudly fulfilled a contract for several years for protecting the trees from the ravages of the canker-worms by keeping a band of tarred paper freshly coated with tar during the season.

After the death of Colonel Jaques in 1859, brick-making was carried on, and the industry sounded the death-knell of the trees. In the boyhood of one, at least, of the present generation an interesting spectacle was the falling of the great stumps into the pits, as excavations undermined their stronghold. Under one of the trees near Jaques street was a fine well of water, which was often a haling-place for the boys on their way to the river for a swim.

Five elms of the Temple-Derby-Jaques trees are standing on Temple street now, but to which of the owners of "Ten Hills"

they may be credited it is impossible to say definitely. Temple street was formerly known as Derby street, and Colonel Jaques presented it to the city. After comparison with other trees whose approximate age is known, one is inclined to say they are something over a hundred years, perhaps one hundred and twenty-five years old. Probably the trees nearer the house were older.

On the corner of Sargent avenue and Broadway was an old pear tree and a very large Balm of Gilead in the early days of Somerville. The large elm at Walnut street, in the parkway, was in the yard of Chauncey Holt, whose house stood there and was removed when Broadway was widened. Mr. Holt lived in Somerville in 1842, and, in all probability, some years previous to that time. Large elms on Walnut street, in front of the Skilton estate, are from sixty to seventy-five years old. Those in front of the Gilman place were set out seventy years ago. Only one remains to-day, standing by the sidewalk.

A Revolutionary elm stood at the corner of Broadway and Cross street until 1860, when it was cut down. Two tulip trees are remembered growing on the Runey estate on Cross street. As tulip trees are slow in coming to their maturity, they must have been of great age.

Willows are remembered growing on Broadway, about opposite Walnut street, long before the land was made into a park. The present trees date from 1876, when, on the seventeenth of June, the park was dedicated and formally opened to the public. Many citizens, at the invitation of the city government, presented trees, which were set out and marked with the names of the donors. Only a very few of the names can be ascertained, as there was no official record kept, or if it was kept, it has been lost. Ex-Mayor Furber set out four for himself and family; ex-Mayor Brastow, Zadoc Bowman, N. E. Fitz, Aaron Sargent, and John C. Magoun each set out one. Jacob Glines set out a sycamore tree very near the flagstaff. Clark Bennett and Quincy A. Vinal, who was chairman of the committee for laying out the park, both furnished trees. Mather E. Hawes set out an English elm. Credit should be given to him as the originator of

the scheme for celebrating the centennial year by setting out trees on Broadway Park.

When the grounds in front of the Latin School were laid out, the graduating class of the year set out a tree, the one on the right in front of the steps of the building. Those on the left were set out some years later by members of the school, who came in working clothes, with the requisite tools, and made a gala time of it one afternoon, under the supervision of the principal, Mr. Baxter. Quincy A. Vinal furnished a tree for the grounds, likewise Charles A. Bradshaw, in the name of his mother, but neither of these trees lived. Robert A. Vinal, besides setting out all the trees on his own estate on Walnut street, furnished a tree for the high school grounds, the one on the westerly corner of the group in front of the Latin High School.

CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1825**By Frank M. Hawes**

(Continued.)

1839-1840.

The teachers of the summer schools outside the Neck were: Miss Mary E. Brown, of the Winter Hill; Elizabeth P. Whittredge, of Prospect Hill; Miss Mary Dodge, of Milk Row; Miss Clara D. Whittemore, of the Russell; and Miss Hannah S. Austin, of the Gardner. These schools were assigned to the care of Messrs. Allen and Underwood, of the trustees. The report of Charles Adams and others, reported at the last town meeting, was referred to Messrs. Forster, Underwood, and Sanborn, who are to ascertain the number of children at Winter Hill. This committee reported in favor of a school on the top of this hill, "on certain conditions," and a few days later it was voted to open this school Monday, June 10, for six months. Miss Caroline M. Sylvester was secured as teacher. The two schools in this district were designated henceforth as the Lower and the Upper Winter Hill schools.

Estimates were received from various persons on the cost of altering the school buildings in Winter Hill, Prospect Hill, and Milk Row districts, according to the last annual report. The contract was awarded to James Twombly, as the lowest bidder, for \$690.45. At the end of the year we find his bill of \$788.37 approved by the auditing committee. The report says: "The former schoolroom at Prospect Hill has been fitted up in such a manner as to make it one of the most desirable in town, having seats with backs, and raised as they recede from the desk of the master; and an addition has been made for the accommodation of the primary school." "The cumbrous desks have been removed from the Milk Row and Winter Hill schoolhouses, and these have been fitted up for the better accommodation of the primaries." August 12, voted to let the teachers dismiss their

schools Wednesday next, to attend the examination of schools in Boston on that day.

September 30 we have the first mention of the Prospect Hill grammar school, which is to be opened Monday, November 4, also the primary school there the same day; the salary of the master to be \$600, payable quarterly. October 14 Cornelius M. Vinson was elected the teacher of this school, and December 30 a clock was voted for his schoolroom. The spring examination occurred April 9, 1840, at 1 p. m. The report adds: "Thus far this school has succeeded beyond the expectations of the board. During the winter the attendance was so regular and full that additional seats were necessary. The discipline was good." There has not been a blow struck at this school since its establishment. The number of scholars enrolled was sixty-two; average attendance, fifty-eight.

As the teacher at Milk Row had not given satisfaction, Miss Sarah M. Burnham was unanimously chosen to her place November 30. For the winter the teachers in the Russell and Gardner districts were Philemon R. Russell, Jr., and Stephen A. Swan, respectively. Mr. Russell received \$120 for his services, and out of a total of thirty-nine pupils held an average of thirty. December 30 "John C. Hooper was chosen to the place made vacant by the death of Stephen A. Swan, who was drowned while skating on Medford pond the 25th instant."

December 16 we read that a violent gale injured the new schoolhouse building within the peninsula. March 5, 1840, this new structure, which was of brick, was named the Warren school, to be used for both sexes. At this time the following districts were formed:—

The Bunker Hill, from Canal bridge to Walker street, and from Charles river to Medford river.

The Warren, from Walker street to Austin, Warren, and Cordis streets, and Everett street to Medford river.

The Harvard (girls) and Winthrop (boys), all south of this line.

The Warren school was dedicated Tuesday, April 21, 1840. The programme was as follows:—

Prayer.

Rev. G. E. Ellis, of the Harvard church.

Singing.

A delegation of scholars from the Bunker Hill, Winthrop, and Harvard schools. Hymn for the occasion by Paul H. Sweetser, teacher of the Harvard school.

Address.

Richard Frothingham, Jr., president of the trustees.

Address.

Dr. A. R. Thompson.

Singing—Juvenile hymns, "Let music swell the breeze" and "My Native Country, Thee."

Address.

Samuel L. Felton, Esq.

Address.

W. W. Wheldon, Esq.

Singing—Juvenile hymns, "Our Father's God, to Thee," and "My Country, 'Tis of Thee."

Address.

George W. Warren, Esq.

Address.

Rev. George E. Ellis.

Singing—Hymn.

Written by Mr. Sweetser.

Prayer.

Rev. N. T. Bent, of St. John's church.

Singing—Juvenile hymn, "My Country, 'Tis of Thee."

March 4 the death of James Underwood, member of the board four years, is recorded. The trustees vote to attend the funeral the next day, March 5, at 3 p. m. The teachers of all the grammar schools are allowed to close their schools, and are invited to attend, with the board. Mr. Warren is selected to draw up suitable resolutions.

There being sixteen primary schools within the peninsula, those outside were numbered as follows:—

No. 17—Lower Winter Hill primary.

No. 18—Upper Winter Hill primary.

No. 19—Prospect Hill primary.

No. 20—Milk Row primary.

The number of scholars enrolled at these schools was 26, 26, 40, 56; the average attendance, 21, 23, 38, and 38, respectively. Throughout the grammar schools on the peninsula "backs have been put to all the seats, as they have hitherto been the subject of much complaint on the part of parents and scholars. For six hours daily have pupils been obliged to sit on a round piece of plank, fashioned to a standard, and without any backs." Mr. Frothingham, for his excellent report, received the congratulations of the board.

The accompanying table, appended to this year's report, will, I am sure, awaken feelings of interest in the minds of all who have thus far followed our history of the public schools of Charlestown.—

COST OF SCHOOLS IN VARIOUS TOWNS, 1838

| | Population | Annual Appropriation | Number of Schools | Wages Per Month | |
|---------------------|------------|----------------------|-------------------|-----------------|---------|
| | | | | Males | Females |
| Charlestown | 10,101 | \$14,477 | 22 | \$ 50.75 | \$17.51 |
| Boston | 80,325 | 93,000 | 100 | 105.08 | 20.83 |
| Lowell | 18,010 | 14,356 | 28 | 44.85 | 16.07 |
| Salem | 14,304 | 11,580 | 20 | 52.77 | 21.10 |
| Nantucket | 9,048 | 6,000 | 12 | 61.98 | 10.42 |
| Roxbury | 7,493 | 5,000 | 16 | 50.33 | 17.20 |
| Lynn | 9,233 | 4,500 | 15 | 36.74 | 12.28 |
| Medford | 2,075 | 2,700 | 7 | 51.39 | 14.10 |
| Chelsea | 1,659 | 2,700 | 7 | 37.50 | 15.59 |
| Cambridge | 7,631 | 5,419.57 | 16 | 54.33 | 19.48 |
| Dorchester | 4,564 | 4,650 | 14 | 35.42 | 15.00 |
| Dedham | 3,532 | 3,000 | 11 | 31.09 | 13.80 |
| Brookline | 1,083 | 1,050 | 5 | 33.50 | 12.66 |
| Milton | 1,772 | 2,000 | 5 | 35.00 | 21.22 |

1840-1841.

The teachers in all the schools outside the Neck for this summer were the same as last year: No. 17, Mary E. Brown; No. 18, Caroline M. Sylvester; No. 19, Elizabeth P. Whittredge; No. 20, Sarah M. Burnham; at the Russell district, Clara D. Whittemore; and at Gardner school, Hannah S. Austin.

In the last report the trustees had expressed the belief that accomplished female teachers would keep the two district schools in a steady state of progress, and recommended that these two schools be made annual schools. This was so voted, and November 21 Miss Charlotte Keynolds was selected for the Gardner district, at a salary of \$225. Levi Russell was elected for the winter term in his home district.

"Messrs. Forster and Sanborn, a committee for estimating the cost of a new building on Winter Hill, reported May 11 that Mr. Charles Adams will give to the town a piece of land 30x40 feet, on condition that a school be built forthwith. This report was accepted, and it was voted to build a house in all respects like one recently built on Elm street, the cost, with fences and outhouses, not to exceed the amount appropriated by the town" (\$500).

"Vacation this year is to be the same as last year, the first week in June and from the 17th to the 29 August, inclusive,—and the following days, 17 June, 4 July, Thanksgiving Day, with the Friday and Saturday following, Christmas Day; and no other days to be allowed except by special vote of the town."

The number of children in town June 29, 1840, between four and sixteen years is 2,619, the census being taken by the assessors, James K. Frothingham, William H. Bacon, Fitch Cutter.

Voted September 29, that teachers must be residents of the town during their term of service. Charles Kimball, of the Harvard (female) school, resigned the last of November, and a flattering letter with the thanks of the board was extended to him for his services.

January 30, 1841, the trustees examined into the complaint of a parent against Mr. Vinson, of the Prospect Hill school, for excluding his son from school. The committee

approve entirely of the teacher's course. "The boy's case of being allowed to return, if of good character, is referred to Messrs. Forster, Mackintire, and Frothingham, who are to confer with Mr. Vinson and report." Voted that Mr. Vinson deserves and hereby receives the thanks of the board for the judicious manner in which he has sustained the government of the school since its establishment, without a single recourse to corporal punishment. February 6 it is found that the boy in question is more than sixteen years of age, "and his expulsion should be adhered to." Soon after this, when it was feared that Mr. Vinson's services could not be retained, his salary was raised to \$800.

April 16. "It was voted that the male teachers of each grammar school join the procession in solemnization of the death of President Harrison next Monday; also that they make arrangements for the boys to join in the procession."

The number of scholars in the outside schools:—

Prospect Hill grammar, 63; average, 43; at the examination, 42.

No. 17—Total number, 27; average, 23; at the examination, 22.

No. 18—Total number, 37; average, 25; at the examination, 28.

No. 19—Total number, 50; average, 42; at the examination, 47.

No. 20—Total number, 60; average, 43; at the examination, 46.

Russell school, 40; average, 29.

Gardner school, not given.

Miss Abby Tufts received \$20 for rent of schoolroom (Winter Hill).

The annual report for this year makes mention of the new schoolhouse on top of Winter Hill, on land given to the town by Charles Adams and others. It is well and neatly fitted up with good ventilators, and seats which allow the children to sit separately. New seats, with backs, have been put in the Russell

schoolroom; blinds have been put on the Prospect Hill and Russell houses.

SCHOOL REGULATIONS.

Bells must be rung and instructors must be in their schools ten minutes before the time of opening. The winter fires must be made one-half hour before school.

No scholar, after schools are opened, shall be admitted without written excuse from parent or guardian.

Indigent pupils may be supplied with books, which must be considered as belonging to the school.

A record must be kept of the pupils' names, their residences, date of admission, ages, absences, etc.

Instructors shall practice mild, but firm, discipline, and avoid corporal punishment, except in cases absolutely necessary, and keep a record of the same.

Instructors must care for the ventilation of their rooms. They shall not award medals or other prizes; shall not allow subscriptions or contributions for any purpose.

Each school is to be divided into five classes, sub-divisions to be left to the teacher.

The books prescribed for the primary schools: My First School Book, Worcester's Second and Third Books of Reading, the Young Reader, the New Testament, the New National Spelling Book, Introduction to the National Spelling Book, Emerson's First Part in Arithmetic, Alphabetical Cards, the Mt. Vernon Reader.

In the grammar schools: American First Class Book, Young Ladies' Class Book, National Reader, Worcester's Third Book, National Spelling Book, Murray's Grammar, Parker and Fox's Grammar, Frost's Grammar, Bailey's Algebra, Emerson's Second and Third Parts in Arithmetic, Robinson's Bookkeeping, Blake's Philosophy, Ccmstock's Chemistry, Wilkins' Astronomy, Worcester's Geography, Mitchell's Geography, Worcester's History, Boston School Atlas, Sullivan's Political Class Book, Gould's Latin Grammar and Latin Reader, Smellie's Natural Philosophy.

1841-1842.

The teachers in the outside schools for this year were: Miss Mary E. Brown, at No. 17; Miss Leonora Skilton, at No. 18,—appointed March 13, to succeed Miss Sylvester, who was transferred to the Warren school; Miss Elizabeth P. Whittredge, at No. 19; Miss Sarah M. Burnham, at No. 20; Miss Elizabeth A. Caverno, at the Russell district. According to the annual report, she was succeeded for the winter term by Levi Russell, but by Philemon R. Russell, Jr., according to the records. Miss Charlotte Reynolds taught in the Gardner district. She was succeeded by a male teacher, to begin the first Monday in December, and continue four months. A. O. Lindsey, a pupil teacher of the Harvard school, was asked to take the position, at \$30 per month. Only a few references to teachers within the peninsula are noted. Lewis B. Munro and John A. Sanborn are made pupil teachers at the Winthrop school, with a salary of \$50 each. Lydia W. Locke, of primary school No. 16, is succeeded August 30 by Hannah S. Austin. Previous to this date, Jane M. Burekes, a primary teacher, is mentioned, and later in the year Charlotte Bracket is appointed to primary school No. 21.

The number of children in town from four to sixteen on May 1, 1841, was 2,719. The summer vacation was from August 16 to August 30. Teachers of primary schools hereafter are to be allowed \$2 per year for building fires, but nothing is to be allowed for sweeping.

The trustees assigned to outside schools (beyond the Neck) were: Messrs. Magoun and Francis Bowman to the Russell and Gardner districts, and Messrs. Allen and Bowman to the Prospect Hill grammar. No. 17 was under Mr. Bowman's supervision, No. 18 under Mr. Magoun, and Nos. 19 and 20 under Mr. Allen.

February 28, 1842, an invitation to the board of trustees and teachers was received from the mayor of Salem to attend a celebration on the occasion of the opening of several new school-houses in that city March 1, 1842. It was accepted.

There is no reference on the records of the trustees to the important fact that the schools "without the Neck," after this

year, were lost to Charlestown forever. From the annual report, signed April 19, 1842, we read: "The recent division of the town by act of the Legislature, dated February 25, 1842, annexed a part of the town to West Cambridge, and an act dated March 3, 1842, incorporated the town of Somerville. This diminishes the number of schools one grammar, two district, and four primary. According to the last report, the salary paid the seven teachers of these schools was \$2,090, and the number of pupils was 294."

This series of articles on the history of the schools of Charlestown, from their earliest establishment to the incorporation of Somerville, must now come to a close. The writer cannot expect a work of this kind to be free from errors, or without many important omissions. The work has been a labor of love. By consulting the town records of Charlestown, which at the present time are carefully preserved in the archives at the City Hall of Boston, the records and reports of the trustees, to be found at the school committee's rooms on Mason street, Boston, the early history by Bartlett (1813), the later one of Frothingham, and the invaluable work of Wyman on old Charlestown families, by looking up newspaper files, and by numerous personal interviews, he has endeavored to rescue many important facts from oblivion, and to give to those interested in the schools of to-day a faithful picture of what has been. The picture is one not to be ashamed of, and ought to appeal to our local pride.

(For an impress of the seal of the Charlestown Free Schools, see report of the School Committee of the city of Charlestown for 1873, to which reports of the Trustees are added. Printed by Caleb Rand.)

INDEX

- Adams, Charles, 78, 92, 96, 97.
 Adams, Chester, 16, 17, 21, 23, 46, 48, 51, 52, 69.
 Adams, Joseph, 10, 86.
 Adams, Joseph, Jr., 13.
 Adams, Samuel, 11.
 Agassiz, Louis, 8.
 Albion Street, 53, 85.
 Alewife Brook, 47.
 Allen, Alfred, 49, 71, 72, 73, 74, 77, 78, 92, 99.
 Allen, Amos F., 77.
 Allen, Amos S., 79, 83.
 Allen, Henry C., 48.
 Alphabetical Cards, 98.
 American Anti-Slavery Society, 29.
 American Arithmetic, Robinson, 25.
 American First Class Book, 25, 98.
 Ames, D., 15.
 Ames, Philander, 49, 92.
 Andrews, Hannah, 72.
 Angier, D., 12.
 Angier, Ellen P., 53.
 Anne Adams Tufts Chapter, D. A. R., 86.
 Appalachian Club, 36.
 Arlington, Mass., 7.
 Arnold Arboretum, 1, 8.
 Austin, Hannah S., 92, 96, 99.
 Austin, N., 13.
 Austin Street, 20, 22, 93.
 Ayer, John F., 53.
 Babcock, A., 13.
 Pacon, Moses, 82.
 Bacon, William H., 96.
 Bagnall, William R., 77, 78, 83.
 Bailey's Algebra, 98.
 Baker, ———, 52.
 Baker, Amos P., 67.
 Baker, Henry, 50.
 Banks Street, 62.
 Parker, Amos, 51.
 Parker, J., 12.
 Barnard, A., 12.
 Barrell, Joseph, 54.
 Barrett, Samuel, 17, 18, 20.
 Barry, J., 15.
 Bartlett, ———, 100.
 Bates, Joshua, 71, 82.
 Battles, ———, 81.
 Baxter, George L., 53, 91.
 Baxter, Sylvester, 32.
 Beacon Hill, 2, 3.
 Beacon-Street Mall, 3.
 Beaver Brook, 8.
 Bennett, Clark, 78, 90.
 Bennett, Josiah O., 53.
 Bent, Rev. N. T., 94.
 Berkeley Street, 57.
 Bigelow, Samuel, 17, 18, 51, 52.
 Blake's Philosophy, 98.
 Blanchard, Catherine, 47, 51.
 Blanchard, J., 12.
 Blodget, L., 15.
 Blue Hills, 32.
 Bonner, Captain John, 2.
 Bonner, Phillip, 11.
 Bonner, William, 74, 78.
 Books for Grammar Schools, 1840, 98.
 Books for Primary Schools, 1840, 98.
 Boston, 2.
 Boston Common, 2, 3.
 Boston Public Library, 2.
 Boston School Atlas, 98.
 Boston Ships, 52.
 Bowman, Francis, 49, 99.
 Bowman, Martha E., 53.
 Bowman, Selwyn Z., 89.
 Bowman, Zadoc, 90.
 Bow Street, 55.
 Boylston Chapel, 81.
 Bracket, Charlotte, 99.
 Brackett, George C., 53.
 Brackett, Samuel, 59.
 Brackett, Thomas, 59.
 Bradbury, Charles, 14.
 Bradbury, C., Jr., 14.
 Bradford, Alice L., 55.
 Bradley, Abigail, 49.
 Bradley, Wymond, 76.
 Bradshaw, Charles A., 91.
 Brastow, Ex-Mayor, 90.
 Brattle Street, Cambridge, 6.
 Bridgewater, Mass., 48.
 Broadway, 63, 85, 88, 89, 90.
 Broadway Park, 91.
 Bromfield Street, Boston, 4.
 Brooks, Peter C., 9.
 Brown, Ann, 21, 72.
 Brown, George W., 50.
 Brown, Hannah C., 53.
 Brown, Mary E., 92, 96, 99.
 Brown, Thomas, Jr., 49, 75, 92.
 Buckley, William, 12.
 Bulfinch, Henry, 71.
 Bunker Hill Aurora, 22.
 Bunker Hill District, 78, 83, 93.
 Bunker Hill School, 22, 78, 82, 94.
 Burekes, Jane M., 99.
 Burnham, Sarah M., 72, 75, 77, 79, 83, 93, 96, 99.
 Butler, W., 15.
 Cambridge, 5, 7, 9.
 "Cambridge College," 48.
 Cameron Avenue, 63.
 Camp Cameron, 63.
 Canal Bridge, 50, 52, 92.
 Capen, Aaron D., 67.

- Caverno, Elizabeth A., 59.
 "Cedar Pasture," 60, 62.
 Cedar Street, 60, 61.
 Cemetery, Old Cambridge, 3.
 Central Street, 57, 58, 59, 60, 89.
 Chamberlin, M. E., 81.
 Charles River, 93.
 Charlestown, 2, 9, 10, 17, 23, 40, 65, 86, 88, 99, 100.
 Charlestown Free Schools, Seal of, 100.
 Charlestown Schools After 1825, 16-20, 46-52, 67-83, 92-100.
 Chase, Philip, 38.
 Chelmsford, Mass., 16.
 Chesnut Court, 59.
 Childs, S., 14.
 Chillis, E., 15.
 City Hall, Boston, 100.
 Clarendon Hill, 63, 64.
 Clark, ———, 14.
 Clark, J., 12.
 Clark, Joseph H., 53.
 Clark, Mary A., 23.
 Class Day Tree, 6.
 Cleveland, H. W. S., 31, 33.
 Cobbet, E., 12.
 Coenonia Club, 86.
 Colburn, Joshua O., 16.
 Colburn's Mental Arithmetic, 25.
 Colby, Lewis, 48.
 College Avenue, 63, 85.
 Columbus Avenue, 55.
 Comstock's Chemistry, 98.
 Common Street, 81.
 Conant, 51.
 Conant, Peter, 18.
 Cook, A., 14.
 Cooke, S. N., 51.
 Cooper, J., 15.
 Copp's Hill, 5.
 Copps, Samuel, 10.
 Cordis Street, 93.
 Cost of Schools, 1838, 95.
 Cotton Hill, 2.
 Craigie House, Cambridge, 6.
 Crocker, ———, 81.
 Cross Street, 57, 90.
 Crowninshield, Sarah M., 71.
 Cummings' First Lessons in Geography and Astronomy, 25.
 Curtis, David, 74.
 Curtis, H. K., 69.
 Curtis, Moses A., 23.
 Curtis, Otis, 85.
 Cutter, A., 13.
 Cutter, Charlotte, 75, 82, 83.
 Cutter, Eb., 14.
 Cutter, Edward, 13, 16.
 Cutter, Eliza Ann, 17, 72.
 Cutter, Fitch, 13, 96.
 Cutter, Richard E., 53.
 Dale, W., 14.
 Damon, Ellen A., 77, 85.
 Damon, Norwood P., 72, 74.
 Dane's Ledge, 57.
 Davenport, A., 13.
 Davis, D., 12.
 Davis, Mary J., 53.
 Davis Square, 62.
 Dedham, Mass., 9.
 Deer Island, 2.
 De las Casas, Mr., 31, 36, 37.
 Derby, General Elias Hasket, 89.
 Derby Street, 90.
 Devens, David, Esq., 67.
 Dexter, Elm, 9.
 Dexter Street, Malden, 9.
 Dickson, A., 14.
 Dickson, William, 11.
 Dodge, E. H., 76, 81.
 Dodge, Marv., 47, 49, 92.
 Dow, Frances, 53.
 Dow, Lorenzo W., 64.
 Dow, Mrs. L. W., 53.
 Draper, Martin, 67.
 Dupee, M. H., 81, 82.
 Dyer, Ezekiel D., 19.
 Eastman, Francis S., 46.
 East Watertown, Mass., 9.
 Eden Street, 81.
 Edleison, Helen F., 53.
 Elliot, Charles, 37.
 Elliot, Charles D., 53.
 Elliot School, Boston, 20.
 Elliot, T. J., 81.
 Ellis, Rev. G. E., 94.
 Elmwood, Cambridge, 7.
 Elm Street, 60, 62, 96.
 Elm Street, Malden, 9.
 Emerson's First Part in Arithmetic, 98.
 Emerson's Second and Third Parts in Arithmetic, 98.
 Essex Street, Boston, 5.
 Evans, Mary W. J., 77, 78, 83.
 Everett, Rev. Linus S., 48, 92.
 Everett Street, 93.
 "Evangeline," 8.
 Fables, La Fontaine, 29, 37.
 Fairbanks, ———, 51, 52, 67.
 Fairbanks, Josiah, 20.
 Farrar, Luther (Calvin), 71.
 Faulkner, William E., 71.
 Fay, Rev. Dr., 73.
 Fay, Rev. Mr., 23.
 Fells Association, 76.
 Felton, O. C., 70.
 Felton, Samuel L., Esq., 94.
 Female Writing School, 52.
 Fernald, M. S., 82, 83.
 Ferrin, ———, 81.
 Fletcher, Annie L., 53.
 Fisk, Ellsworth, 53.
 Fitchburg Railroad, 65.
 Fitz, N. E., 53, 59, 90.
 Flagg, Wilson, 34, 38.
 Planagan, Lewis C., 61.
 Flanders, Miss, 18.
 "Flora of Somerville, The," 55.
 Follet, Bradbury, 70.
 Ford, C., 15.
 Forster, Charles, 49, 77, 78, 82, 92, 96, 97.
 Forster, Deacon Charles, 60, 88.
 Fort Hill, 4.
 Fort Wagner, 4.
 Foster, T., 15.
 Franklin School, 60, 65.
 French, Miss Rebecca, 17, 21.
 Fresh Pond, 9.

- Frost's Grammar, 98.
 Frost, Martha, 18, 19.
 Frost, Samuel, 12.
 Frost, Samuel Tufts, 57.
 Frost, William, 13.
 Frothingham, ———, 22.
 Frothingham, James K., 48, 70, 81, 96.
 Frothingham, Richard, Jr., 49, 51, 82, 94, 95, 97.
 Furber, William H., 53, 90.
 Garden Court, 58.
 "Gardner District," 50, 51, 67, 78, 79, 83, 83, 96, 99.
 Gardner, Henry, 11.
 Gardner, Mary B., 75.
 Gardner, Miles, 67.
 Gardner, Miss, 20.
 Gardner Row, 77.
 Gardner, Samuel, 14.
 Gardner, S. Jr., 14.
 Gardner School, 67, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 92, 96, 97.
 Gafield, E., 12.
 Garrison, William Lloyd, 37.
 Gates, Miss, 52.
 Geddes, Alex., 11.
 Gerrish, Miss Elizabeth, 21, 46.
 Gerrald, S., 12.
 Gerry, Martha J. H., 53.
 Gilman Estate, 90.
 Gillen, S., 15.
 Glines, Jacob, 90.
 Goddard, N., 13.
 Goddard, T., 13.
 Gould's Latin Grammar and Latin Reader, 98.
 Gould, T., 14.
 Green, J., 15.
 Green, General, 57.
 Greenleaf, P., 15.
 Greenleaf, T., 15.
 Griffin, M., 12.
 Grove Street, Watertown, 9.
 Gulliver, Lemuel, 22, 46, 50.
 Hadley, Benjamin, 11.
 Hager, J., 14.
 Hager, J., Jr., 14.
 Haley, M. F., 49.
 Hall Avenue, 63.
 Hall house, 63.
 Hall, John K., 59.
 Hanover Square, 5.
 Harrington, C., 11, 74.
 Harrison, President, 97.
 Harvard College, 6, 7, 23.
 Harvard Hall, 6.
 Harvard School, 82, 94, 95, 96, 99.
 Harvard Street, 59, 81.
 Haskell, Albert L., 53.
 Hastings, Joseph S., 48, 67.
 Hathern, L., 15.
 Hawes, Frank Mortimer, 16, 46, 53, 67, 92.
 Hawes, Mather E., 90.
 Hawes School, South Boston, 67.
 Hawkins, Christopher, 11.
 Hawkins, Gay C., 11, 26, 48, 49, 50, 52, 67, 69, 70.
 Hawkins, Guy C., Papers, 10-15, 40-45.
 Hawkins House, 55.
 Hay, Sarah G., 82.
 Hay, Esther M., 81, 82.
 Hayes Estate, 63.
 Hazelton, Amos, 10, 49, 72.
 Heald, Helen E., 53.
 Hendlock Wood, 1, 8.
 Henchman, Nathaniel 11., 11, 17, 18.
 Henderson, C. E., 53.
 Higginson, Colonel T. W., 6, 37.
 Highland Avenue, 46, 53, 57, 85.
 High Street, Boston, 4.
 Hill, Ephraim, 74.
 Hill, Ives, 54.
 Hill, J. D., 12.
 Hilliard, A. S., 31, 33.
 Historical Society, Somerville, 88.
 Historical Society, Somerville, Officers of, 84.
 Hoit, A. G., 21.
 Holden, Bertha E., 53.
 Holden, Oliver, 73.
 Hollis Hall, 6.
 Holmes, O. W., 3, 53.
 Holmes' Field, 6.
 Holroyd, John, 20, 22.
 Holt, Chauncey, 90.
 Hooper, John C., 93.
 Hooper, Thomas, 22.
 Hovey, James, 77, 80, 83.
 Hovey, W., 15.
 Hunnewell, William, 13.
 Hurd, J. Stearns, 20, 21.
 Hutchinson, H., 15.
 Hutchinson, Thomas, 11.
 Hyde, Adeline, 17.
 Inman Street, Cambridge, 9.
 Ireland, George W., 56.
 Ireland, John, 10, 56.
 Jackson, Rev. Henry, 16, 18, 46.
 Jaques, Fannie C., 53.
 Jaques, Henry, 23, 48.
 Jaques, Colonel Samuel, 89, 90.
 Jaquith, Miss, 52.
 Jaquith, O., 81.
 Jaquith, Mrs. Polly, 17.
 Jeemes, J., 15.
 Jeffurds, Mary W., 51, 67.
 Jenks, Joseph W., 46.
 Jewett, Henry I., 71.
 Johnson, C. A., 82.
 Johnson, Elizabeth L., 72.
 Johnson, Jotham, 12.
 Jones, Mary E., 82, 83.
 Jones, Roxanna, 17.
 Joy, Benjamin, 12.
 Judkins, R., 15, 19, 20.
 Kelly, Hall J., 10, 17, 18.
 Kendall, Isaac, 71.
 Kent house, 60.
 Kent, Jonathan, 10.
 Kent, Samuel, 10.
 Kidder, A. M., 53.
 Kidder, Andrew, 53.
 Kidder, J., 12.
 Kimball, Charles, 82, 96.
 Kimball, George A., 53.
 King, C. C., 46.
 Kirkpatrick, Eleanor G., 53.
 Knapp Street, 56.

- Knight, C., 15.
 Knight, Hersina, 18, 19.
 Knowlton, G., 15.
 Lake, Alice E., 10.
 Lampson, E., 14.
 Lampson, N., 14.
 Lampson, S., 14.
 Landers Street, 56.
 Larkin, A., 14.
 "Latin Grammar School," 20.
 Latin School, 91.
 Laurel Street, 57.
 Lawrence, Rosewell B., 37.
 Lawrence Street, 81.
 Lears, Georgia, 53.
 Lee, General, 87.
 Libby, Martha E., 55.
 "Liberty Tree," 5.
 Lindsey, A. O., 90.
 Littlefield, Joshua, 11.
 Locke, Ann W., 71, 72, 81, 82.
 Locke, Irene S., 75.
 Locke, Lydia W., 99.
 Locke, Margaret W., 72.
 Longfellow, H. W., 4, 6, 8.
 Loring, J. W., 15.
 Lovett, J., 12.
 Lowell, J. R., 7, 8.
 Lowell, Mass., 77.
 Lowell Railroad, 65.
 Lower Winter Hill Primary, 95.
 Lower Winter Hill School, 92.
 Mackintire, Elijah P., 49, 97.
 Magoon, John C., 11, 92.
 Magoun, Aaron B., 69, 71, 85, 87.
 Magoun, John C., 49, 87, 90, 99.
 Magoun, Nathaniel, 23.
 Magoun Square, 85, 87.
 Main Street, 87.
 Main Street, Medford, 9.
 Malden, Mass., 9.
 Mann, George C., 37.
 Mann, Jairus, 53.
 "Manor House," 89.
 March, Olive, 76.
 Marshall, Elizabeth B., 81.
 Mason Street, Boston, 100.
 Massachusetts Abolitionist, 29.
 Mather, Increase, 3.
 Mather, Nathaniel, 3.
 Mather, Mrs. Richard, 3.
 Maulsby, David L., 53.
 McKoun, Martha T., 71.
 McLean Asylum, 54, 65.
 Mead, Abba (Abby), 51, 67, 69, 70, 71, 73, 74, 77.
 Mead, Anna B., 72.
 Mead, Sarah A., 49.
 Mears, J., 15.
 Medford, Mass., 30.
 Medford Pond, 93.
 Medford Public Domain Club, 38.
 Medford River, 93.
 Medford Street, 54, 70, 88.
 Merrill, Nathan, 71, 73, 82.
 Methodist Meeting House, 81.
 Middlesex Bleachery, 57, 60.
 Middlesex Canal, 85.
 Middlesex Fells, 29-39.
 Miller, Charles, 74.
 Miller, James, 54.
 Miller, Joseph, 12.
 Miller, Joseph, Jr., 12.
 Miller, Deacon Thomas, 67.
 Milk Row District, 73, 79, 92, 93.
 Milk Row Primary, 95.
 Milk Row School, 16, 18, 20, 21, 47, 48, 50, 51, 59, 67, 70, 71, 72, 74, 75, 76, 77, 81, 83, 92, 93.
 Milton, Mass., 9.
 Mitchell's Geography, 98.
 Morse's Geography and Atlas, 25.
 Moulton's Point, 81.
 Mt. Andrew Park, 32.
 Mt. Vernon Reader, 98.
 Muir, John, 1.
 Mulliken, John W., 71.
 Munro, Lewis B., 99.
 Munroe, Edwin, 11, 73, 74.
 Munroe, William, 11.
 Murray's English Grammar, 25.
 Murray's Grammar, 98.
 Murray's Introduction to English Reader, 25.
 My First School Book, 98.
 National Forestry Congress, 36.
 National Reader, 98.
 National Spelling Book, Introduction to, 98.
 National Spelling Book, 98.
 Neck School, 51, 52, 70, 71, 75, 77, 78.
 Newell, Ann E., 83.
 New England Magazine, 7.
 Newball, A., 12.
 New National Spelling Book, 98.
 Odin, John, 11.
 Old Cambridge, 63.
 "Old Elm," 2.
 "Old Five Mile Woods," 30.
 Old Granary Burying Ground, 4, 5.
 "Old Red Gate, The," 86.
 Owen, John, 38.
 Paddock Elms, 4.
 Paddock, Major Adino, 4.
 Paddock's Mall, 4.
 Page, Jacob, 14.
 Park Street, 57.
 Park Street Church, 5.
 Parker, Benjamin, 14, 15.
 Parker and Fox's Grammar, 98.
 Parker, G. A., 76.
 Parker, John, 16.
 Parker, L. M., 16.
 Pearson, E., 15.
 Permanent Funds of Trustees of Charlestown Schools, 72.
 Perry, Sarah, 12, 16, 17.
 Phillips Pasture, 4.
 Phipps, J., 13.
 Phipps, W. C., 13.
 Phipps, William S., 18.
 Pierce, —, 51, 52.
 Pierce, A., 12.
 Pierce, Charles, 20.
 Pierce, Joel, 21, 74, 77, 79, 83.
 Pine Hill, Medford, 30, 33.
 "Pine Island Pond," 61.
 Pitman Street, 60.
 Pitts, Samuel, 46.
 "Polly Swamp," 53, 60, 85.

- Pool, Lot, 16, 22.
 Pope, Rev. Augustus R., 59.
 Prescott Street, 81.
 Preston Road, 56.
 Primary Schools, 95.
 Prospect Hill, 65, 73.
 Prospect Hill District, 74, 92.
 Prospect Hill Grammar School, 93, 97, 99.
 Prospect Hill Park, 55.
 Prospect Hill Primary, 95.
 Prospect Hill School, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 83, 98.
 Prospect Hill Schoolhouse, 55, 70.
 Putnam, Betsey, 72, 81.
 Putnam, Joanna S., 81.
 Pythian Block, 55.
 Quincy, Josiah, 7.
 Quincy, Mass., 9.
 Quincy Place, Boston, 4.
 Rand, Benjamin, 13, 59, 62.
 Rand, Caleb, 100.
 Rand, Henry C., 53.
 Rand, Thomas, 11, 58, 61.
 Rand, Thomas, Jr., 19.
 Rand, Widow, 58.
 Rand, William, 11.
 Ravine Woods, 54.
 Raymond, Francis H., 53.
 Raymond, Martha L., 53.
 Rea, Mrs. Hannah, 17, 72.
 Read, Edwin F., 53.
 Reasons in Favor of a Separation of
 Somerville from Charlestown, 40-45.
 Redwoods, 8.
 Reynolds, Charlotte, 96, 99.
 Richardson, A., 12.
 Robinson's Bookkeeping, 98.
 Robinson's Elements, 25.
 Robinson, Enoch, 69.
 Robinson, Ezra, 69.
 Robinson, Frederick, 49.
 Rogers, Timothy P., 72.
 Roosevelt, President, 8.
 "Round House," 60.
 Rules and Regulations of Charlestown
 Free Schools, 24-25.
 Rules and Regulations for the Govern-
 ment of the Charlestown Free Schools,
 68, 69.
 Runey Estate, 90.
 Runey, John, 48, 50, 67, 74.
 Runey, John, Jr., 11.
 "Russell District," 50, 51, 67, 69, 71, 73,
 78, 82, 83, 93, 96, 99.
 Russell, James, 13, 16.
 Russell, Kezia, 69, 72.
 Russell, Levi, 74, 76, 96, 99.
 Russell, Phila, 79.
 Russell, Philemon, 63.
 Russell, Philemon R., 13, 77.
 Russell, Philemon R., Jr., 16, 19, 21, 46,
 48, 83, 93, 99.
 Russell School, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 92,
 97, 98.
 Russell, William A., 14.
 Salem, Mass., 99.
 Sanborn, David A., 11.
 Sanborn, E. W., 51.
 Sanborn's Grocery Store, 55.
 Sanborn, Jeremiah, 50.
 Sanborn, John, 49, 92, 96.
 Sanborn, John A., 90.
 Sanborn, Robert, 11.
 Sargent, Aaron, 22, 53, 90.
 Sargent Avenue, 90.
 Sargent, Professor, 5.
 Sargent, T., 13.
 Saunderson, S., 12.
 Sawyer, Charlotte A., 81.
 Sawyer, Ellen M., 53.
 Sawyer, F., 13.
 Sawyer, S., 15.
 Sawyer, Susan L., 72, 81.
 Sawyer, William, Jr., 48.
 Schoolbooks in 1828, 25.
 School Curriculum, 68, 69.
 School Districts Formed, 93.
 School Districts Re-numbered, 47.
 School Holidays, 1828, 26.
 School Holidays, 1830-31, 59.
 School Holidays, 1832-33, 68.
 School Regulations, 1841, 98.
 School Street, 56, 57, 88.
 Scollay Square, Boston, 2.
 Sewell, Samuel E., 32.
 Shapley, H., 12.
 Shawmut, 2.
 Shed, Samuel, 12.
 Sherman, John N., 51, 52.
 Sherman, I. N., 67, 69, 71.
 Shrewsbury, Mass., 48.
 Shute, James, 58.
 Simpson Avenue, 63.
 Simpson, Margaret A., 53.
 Skilton Estate, 90.
 Skilton, Lydia A., 72, 81, 99.
 Skilton, Malvina B., 81.
 Smellie's Natural Philosophy, 98.
 Smith, E. E., 81.
 Smith, Ebenezer, Jr., 50.
 Smith, Juliet G., 53.
 Soldiers' Monument, 2.
 Some Old Trees, Number 1, 1-9.
 Some Old Trees, Number 2, 53-61.
 Some Old Trees, Number 3, 85-91.
 Somerville Avenue, 55, 57, 58, 65.
 Somerville Journal, 22.
 Somerville Journal Souvenir, 53.
 Sowden, J., 12.
 Spaulding, A., 11.
 Sprague, Ann D., 20.
 Spring Street, 60.
 Stanton, L., 14.
 Stanton, L. W., 50.
 Stearns, Maria A., 47.
 Stearns, Maria H., 46.
 Stephenson, Thomas, 52.
 Stetson, Lebbeus, 59.
 Stetson, Susan S., 53.
 Stevens, John, 49.
 Stevens, L., 15.
 Stevens, Rachel T., 75, 76.
 Stickney, Ira, 21.
 Storer Estate, 4.
 Story Street, Cambridge, 6.
 Stone, A., 12.
 Stone Elm, 9.

- Stone, Daniel, 11.
 Stone, Sara A., 1, 53, 85.
 Stone, Simon, 3.
 Sudbury Street, Boston, 4.
 Sullivan's Political Class Book, 98.
 Summer Street, 57, 59.
 Summer Street, Boston, 2.
 Summit Avenue, 57.
 Swan, James, 50, 52, 70, 71.
 Swan, John, 11.
 Swan, Reuben, 51, 52.
 Swan, Reuben, Jr., 70, 71.
 Swan, Robert, 83.
 Swan, Samuel, 82.
 Swan (Samuel?), 72.
 Swan, Stephen A., 93.
 Swan, William D., 70, 71, 72, 78, 82, 83.
 Sweetser, John, 50.
 Sweetser, Paul H., 82, 94.
 Swift, Benjamin, 23.
 Sycamore Street, 60, 87.
 Sylvester, Caroline M., 92, 96, 99.
 Synnues, Mary B., 82.

 Tandy, A. S., 15.
 Tappan, L., 13.
 Taylor, J., 12.
 Teel, Jonathan, 14.
 Teel, Jonathan, Jr., 14.
 Teel, S. P., 13.
 Teel, T., 14.
 Temple, Sir Robert, 89.
 Temple Street, 89, 90.
 "Ten Hills Farm," 89.
 Tenney, R. G., 46, 47, 48, 82.
 "Testament, The New," 25, 98.
 Thayer, Zeba, 12.
 Thompson, Dr. A. R., 94.
 Thompson, Benjamin, 48.
 Thomson, C., 14.
 Thompson, Charles, 48, 49, 71, 74, 75.
 Thompson, Mrs. Mary, 17.
 Thorning, L., 14.
 Thurston, A., 15.
 Thurston Street, 88.
 Tidd, Charles, 19.
 Titus, Rev. Anson, 53.
 Titus, D., 15.
 Torrey, ———, 13.
 Town Hill, 21, 82.
 Town Hill School, 51, 70, 71, 73.
 Town House, 78.
 Track, Benjamin, 82.
 Training Field, 22, 23, 81, 82.
 Training Field School, 51, 70, 71.
 Tube Works, 57.
 Tufts, Abby, 97.
 Tufts, Amos, 67.
 Tufts, Asa, 10.
 Tufts, Asa, 2nd, 11.
 Tufts, Benjamin, 12.
 Tufts, Bernard, 10.
 Tufts, Bowan A., 16, 21.
 Tufts, Charles, 11.
 Tufts College, 85.
 Tufts, Daniel, 11.
 Tufts Homestead, 89.
 Tufts House, 87, 88.
 Tufts, Isaac, 10.
 Tufts, Joel, 11.
 Tufts, John, 10, 60, 61, 70, 73, 87.
 Tufts, John, Jr., 12.
 Tufts, Joseph, 89.
 Tufts, Joseph F., 48, 49.
 Tufts, Joseph T., 71.
 Tufts, M. Alice, 53.
 Tufts, Martha, 53.
 Tufts, Nathan, 59.
 Tufts, Nathan, 2nd, 11.
 Tufts, Oliver, 11.
 Tufts, Samuel, 10, 55.
 Tufts, Timothy, 13, 53, 62.
 Turner, Captain Larkin, 49.
 Tweed, Benjamin F., 78, 82, 83.
 Twombly, James, 92.
 Twycross, A. G., 71.
 Tyler, Columbus, 59.
 Tyler, George W., 49.
 Tyler, Mrs. Jonas, 86.

 Underwood, James, 49, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 92, 94.
 Unitarian Parsonage Grounds, 58.
 Universalist Meeting House, 81.
 Upper Winter Hill Primary, 95.
 Upper Winter Hill School, 92.
 Ursuline Community, The, Mt. Benedict, Charlestown, 24.

 Vacations, 1840-41, 96.
 Valentine, Elliot, 67.
 Valentine, J. W., M. D., 49, 73, 74.
 Varnum, N. J., 15.
 Vinal Avenue, 57.
 Vinal, Anna P., 53.
 Vinal, Louise A., 53, 55.
 Vinal, Quincy A., 90, 91.
 Vinal, Robert, 11.
 Vinal, Robert A., 91.
 Vinson, Cornelius M., 93, 96, 97.

 Wait, Charles, 74.
 Wait, David, 12.
 Walker, Cornelius, 17, 18, 19, 20.
 Walker, Rev. James, 23, 48.
 Walker, Mary, 17, 72, 82.
 Walker, Moses W., 50, 51, 52, 67.
 Walker's Dictionary, 25.
 Walker Street, 93.
 Wallis, Andrew, 19.
 Walnut Hill School, 64.
 Walnut Street, 53, 55, 90.
 Walsh, W., 15.
 Ward, A., 13.
 Ward, Eliza D., 46.
 Ward, J., 12.
 Warren District, 93.
 Warren, George W., Esq., 49, 73, 76, 92, 94.
 Warren School, 99.
 Warren School Dedication, Programme, 94.
 Warren Street, 81.
 Warren, Susan Ann, 20.
 Warren, Susan R., 21.
 Washington Elm, 1, 5, 6.
 Washington, George, 6.
 Washington School, Cambridge, 6.
 Washington Street, 54.
 Washington Street, Boston, 4, 5.
 Washington Street, Watertown, 9.
 Watson, S., 13.

- Watertown, Mass., 3.
 Waverley Elm, 8.
 Waverley Oaks, 1. 8.
 Wayre, Charlotte, 16, 17.
 Wayne, Eliza, 16, 17.
 Weld, Theodore D., 22.
 West Cambridge, 78, 79, 100.
 "West Cambridge Road School," 48.
 West Medford, Mass., 9.
 Wheeler, A., 15.
 Wheldon, W. W., Esq., 94.
 Whipple, Ann E., 18, 19, 20, 21, 72, 73.
 Whipple, Ann P., 75.
 Whipple, Benjamin, 18, 19, 20.
 Whitcomb, I. A., 88.
 White, Emeline G., 72.
 Whitmore, William, 11.
 Whitney, E., 15.
 Whittemore, Clara D., 76, 78, 83, 92, 96.
 Whittemore, Manda (Miranda), 46, 47, 49, 51, 67.
 Whittemore Elm, 7.
 Whittemore, Samuel, 7.
 Whittier, John G., 32.
 Whittredge, A. W., 72.
 Whittredge, Elizabeth P., 79, 83, 92, 96, 99.
 Wilcolm, W., 15.
 Wiley, Phoebe W., 49.
 Wiley, W. S., 74.
 Wilkins' Astronomy, 98.
 Willard, Paul, Esq., 48, 49, 70, 71.
 Willow Avenue, 62.
 Winter Hill, 65, 74, 85, 86, 87, 96, 97.
 Winter Hill District, 78, 92.
 Winter Hill Road, 21, 77.
 Winter Hill School, 16, 18, 19, 20, 47, 48, 50, 51, 52, 67, 69, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 81, 83, 92.
 Winthrop School, 81, 82, 94, 99.
 Woburn, Mass., 51, 78, 79.
 "Woburn Road School," 48.
 Woodbury, Augusta F., 86.
 Woodbury, William, 87.
 Woodman, Edith A., 53.
 Woods, John M., 60.
 Worcester's Geography, 98.
 Worcester, George P., 76.
 Worcester's History, 98.
 Worcester's Second and Third Books of Reading, 98.
 Worcester's Third Book, 98.
 Wright, C., 14.
 Wright, Elizur, 29-39.
 Wright, Ellen M., 29.
 Wyman, 22.
 Wyman, Edward, 72.
 Wyman, Lucy, 17.
 Wyman, Luke, 12, 46, 47, 48.
 Wyman, Miss, 73.
 Wyman, N., 14.
 Wyman, William, 14.
 Young Ladies' Class Book, 95.
 Young Reader, The, 98.

Officers of Somerville Historical Society

1906-1907

| | |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------|
| President | Frank M. Hawes |
| First Vice-President | Levi L. Hawes |
| Second Vice-President | James F. Whitney |
| Third Vice-President | John F. Ayer |
| Treasurer | Seth Mason |
| Recording Secretary | Mrs. William B. Holmes |
| Corresponding Secretary | Mrs. Ella P. Hurd |
| Librarian and Curator | Alfred M. Cutler |

Council-at-Large

Charles D. Elliot

Miss Anna P. Vinal

L. Roger Wentworth

Committees for Year 1906-7

Publications

| | |
|------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Sam Walter Foss, 249 Highland Ave. | Sara A. Stone, 19 Central St. |
| Frank M. Hawes, 257 School St. | Samuel C. Earle, 7 Electric Ave. |

Military Records

| | |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St. | L. L. Hawes, 164 Highland Ave. |
| John H. Dusseault, 42 Sargent Ave. | Miss Mary A. Haley, 117 Summer St. |

Hospitality

| | |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| William B. Holmes, 60 Heath St. | Mrs. L. B. Pillsbury, 17 Dartmouth St. |
| Mrs. William B. Holmes, 60 Heath St. | Mrs. H. M. Heald, 438 Broadway |
| Mrs. F. D. Lapham, 3 Hathorn St. | |

Necrology

| | |
|--|------------------------------------|
| Professor D. L. Maulsby, 80 Curtis St. | Miss E. A. Waters, 132 Perkins St. |
| Rev. Francis A. Gray, 19 Dartmouth St. | |

Historic Sites

| | |
|----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Joseph O. Hayden, 174 Summer St. | Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St. |
| Aaron Sargent, 290 Broadway | |

Essays and Addresses

| | |
|----------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| John F. Ayer, Wakefield | Miss Florence E. Carr, 89 Oxford St. |
| Seth Mason, 32 Madison St. | William E. Brigham, 4 Hillside Ave. |
| Mrs. J. F. Ayer, Wakefield | |

Library and Cabinet

| | |
|-------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Alfred M. Cutler, 234 Medford St. | Miss Edith B. Hayes, 52 Dartmouth St. |
| Mrs. L. L. Hawes, 164 Highland Ave. | |

Photographs

| | |
|------------------------------------|--|
| Benj. F. Freeman, 2 Mt. Vernon St. | Albert L. Haskell, 422 Somerville Ave. |
| James F. Whitney, 40 Dartmouth St. | Mrs. C. L. Maynard, 14 Greenville St. |

Press and Clippings

| | |
|-------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Miss Lucy M. Stone, 15 Central St. | Miss Annie S. Gage, 32 Marshall St. |
| Miss Anna P. Vinal, 9 Aldersey St. | Mrs. Charles D. Elliot, 59 Oxford St. |
| Mrs. Ella P. Hurd, 55 Columbus Ave. | Miss Mary E. Elliot, 59 Oxford St. |

[illegible]



JAN 78



N. MANCHESTER,

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 014 110 764 1